

THE
COMPLETE WORKS
IN
VERSE AND PROSE
OF
EDMUND SPENSER.

*EDITED, WITH A NEW LIFE, BASED ON ORIGINAL RESEARCHES
AND A GLOSSARY EMBRACING NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.*

BY THE
REV. ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A.,

St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire;

IN ASSOCIATION WITH

PROFESSOR ANGUS, LL.D., LONDON.
THE REV. THOMAS ASHE, M.A.,
CREWE.
PROFESSOR CHILD, LL.D., HARVARD
UNIVERSITY, CAMBRIDGE, U.S.A.
THE RIGHT HONBLE. THE LORD
CHIEF JUSTICE OF ENGLAND.
PROFESSOR EDWARD DOWDEN,
LL.D., TRINITY COLLEGE, DUBLIN.
EDMUND W. GOSSE, ESQ., LONDON.
THE REV. WILLIAM HUBBARD,
MANCHESTER.
PROFESSOR HENRY MORLEY, LL.D.,
LONDON.

DR. BRINSLEY NICHOLSON,
LONDON.
GEORGE SAINTSBURY, ESQ.,
LONDON.
FRANCIS TURNER PALGRAVE,
ESQ., LL.D., LONDON.
AUBREY DE VERE, ESQ., CURRAGH
CHASE, ADARE.
PROFESSOR WARD, M.A., OWENS COL-
LEGE, MANCHESTER.
THE REV. RICHARD WILTON, M.A.,
LONDESBOROUGH RECTORY.
WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT, ESQ.,
M.A., LL.D., TRINITY COLL., CAMB.,

ETC.

ETC.

ETC.

IN EIGHT VOLUMES.

VOL. VI.

THE FAERIE QUEENE:

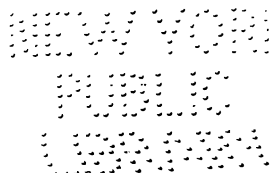
BOOK II. CANT. vii.—xii., AND BOOK III. CANT. i.—x. (1596.)

WITH VARIOUS READINGS OF 1590, ETC., ETC.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY

1882.

100 copies only.]



CONTENTS OF VOL. VI.

THE FAERIE QUEENE (*continued*):—

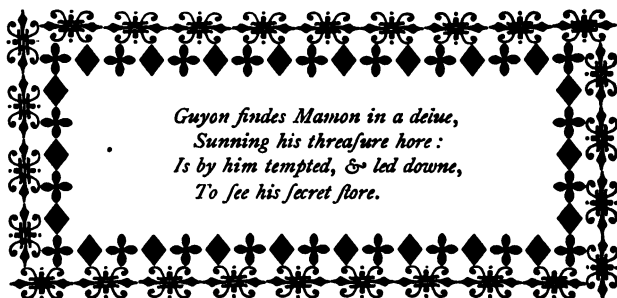
BOOK II.

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF SIR GUYON, OR OF TEMPERAUNCE (<i>continued</i>).		PAGE
Canto	VII.	1
"	VIII.	24
"	IX.	44
"	X.	65
"	XI.	92
"	XII.	109

BOOK III.

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS, OR OF CHASTITY.		
Canto	I.	142
"	II.	165
"	III.	183
"	IV.	205
"	V.	226
"	VI.	245
"	VII.	264
"	VIII.	285
"	IX.	303
"	X.	322

Book II.—Cant. VII.



AS Pilot well expert in perilous waue,
That to a stedfast starre his courſe hath bent,
When foggy miſtes, or cloudy tempeſts haue
The faithfull light of that faire lampe yblent,
And couer'd heauen with hideous dreriment, 10
Vpon his card and compas firmes his eye,
The maiſters of his long experiment,
And to them does the ſteddy helme apply,
Bidding his winged veſſell fairely forward fly. /

So *Guyon* hauing loſt his truſty guide,
Late left beyond that *Ydle lake*, proceedes
Yet on his way, of none accompanide ;
And euermore himſelfe with comfort feedes,
Of his owne vertues, and prayſe-worthy deedes.

l. 3, '*ſunning*': l. 5, '*ſecrete*': l. 7, Church '*improves*' by '*the*' =
pole-star: l. 12, '*mayſters*': l. 15, '*truſtie guyde*': l. 17, '*accompanyde*':
l. 19, '*praiſe-worthie*.'

So long he yode, yet no aduenture found, 20
 Which fame of her shrill trompet worthy reedes :
 For still he traueild through wide waftfull ground,
 That nought but desert wildernesse shew'd all around.

At laft he came vnto a gloomy glade,
 Couer'd with boughes & shrubs from heauens light,
 Whereas he fitting found in secret shade
 An vncouth, faluage, and vnciuile wight,
 Of grievly hew, and fowle ill fauour'd fight;
 His face with smoke was tand, and eyes were bleard,
 His head and beard with fout were ill bedight, 30
 His cole-blacke hands did fcepe to haue beene feard
 In fmithes fire-spitting forge, and nayles like clawes ap-
 peard.

His yron coate all ouergrowne with ruft,
 Was vnderneath eneloped with gold,
 Whose gliftring gloffe darkned with filthy duft,
 Well it appeared, to haue beene of old
 A worke of rich entayle, and curious mould,
 Wouen with antickes and wild Imagery :
 And in his lap a mafse of coyne he told,
 And turned vpſide downe, to feede his eye 40
 A couetous defire with his huge theafury.

And round about him lay on euery fide
 Great heapes of gold, that neuer could be ſpent :
 Of which ſome were rude owre, not purifide
 Of *Mulcibers* deuouring element ;

l. 23, 'shewed' : l. 29, ' & ' : l. 31, 'ben' : l. 32, 'fire-spitting' is 'fire-spitting' in 1609 : *ib.*, 'fmythes' : l. 36, 'yet' : l. 38, 'wyld ymagery' : l. 40, misprinted in '96 'vpſidowne.'

Some / others were new driuen, and diftent
 Into great Ingoes, and to wedges square ;
 Some in round plates withouten moniment ;
 But moſt were ſtampt, and in their metall bare
 The antique ſhapes of kings and keſars ſtraunge & rare.

Soone as he *Guyon* ſaw, in great affright 51
 And haſt he roſe, for to remoue afide
 Thoſe pretious hils from ſtraungers enuious fight,
 And downe them poured through an hole full wide,
 Into the hollow earth, them there to hide.
 But *Guyon* lightly to him leaping, ſtayd
 His hand, that trembled, as one terrifyde ;
 And though him ſelfe were at the fight diſmayd,
 Yet him perforce reſtraynd, and to him doubtfull fayd.

What art thou man, (if man at all thou art) 60
 That heré in deſert haſt thine habitaunce,
 And theſe rich heapes of wealth doeſt hide apart
 From the worldes eye, and from her right vſaunce ?
 Thereat with ſtaring eyes fixed aſkaunce,
 In great diſdaine, he anſwerd ; Hardy Elſe,
 That dareſt vew my direfull countenaunce,
 I read thee raſh, and heedleſſe of thy ſelfe,
 To trouble my ſtill ſeate, and heapes of pretious pelfe.

God of the world and worldlings I me call,
 Great *Mammon*, greateſt god below the ſkye, 70
 That of my plenty poure out vnto all,
 And vnto none my graces do enuye :

l. 47, '*Ingowes*'—in 1679 '*Ingots*': l. 49, '*metal*': l. 50, '*ſtraung*':
 l. 52, '*haſte*': l. 62, '*heapes*' in '90 is '*hils*': *ib.*, '*welth*': l. 65, ,
 for ;.

Riches, renowme, and principality,
 Honour, estate, and all this worldes good,
 For which men swinck and sweat incessantly,
 Fro me do flow into an ample flood,
 And in the hollow earth haue their eternall brood. /

Wherefore if me thou deigne to serue and sew,
 At thy commaund lo all these mountaines bee ;
 Or if to thy great mind, or greedy vew 80
 All these may not suffice, there shall to thee
 Ten times so much be numbred francke and free.
Mammon (said he) thy godheades vaunt is vaine,
 And idle offers of thy golden fee ;
 To them, that couet such eye-glutting gaine,
 Proffer thy giftes, and fitter seruauents entertaine.

Me ill befits, that in der-doing armes,
 And honours suit my vowed dayes do spend,
 Vnto thy bounteous baytes, and pleasing charmes,
 With which weake men thou witchest, to attend : 90
 Regard of worldly mucke doth fowly blend,
 And low abase the high heroicke spright,
 That ioyes for crownes and kingdomes to contend ;
 Faire shields, gay steedes, bright armes be my delight:
 Those be the riches fit for an aduent'rous knight.

Vaine glorious Elfe (said he) doest not thou weete,
 That money can thy wantes at will supply ?
 Sheilds, steedes, and armes, & all things for thee meet
 It can puruay in twinckling of an eye ;

l. 83, 'godheads': l. 87, 'befits' is 'befits' in 1609; but see Glossary s.v.: *ib.*, 'derdoing': l. 88, 'daies': l. 96, 'saide,' and so l. 105: l. 98, ' &' (1st): l. 99, 'puruay.'

And crownes and kingdomes to thee multiply. 100
 Do not I kings create, throw the crowne
 Sometimes to him, that low in dust doth ly ?
 And him that raignd, into his rowme thrust downe,
 And whom I lust, do heape with glory and renowne ?

All otherwise (said he) I riches read,
 And deeme them roote of all disquietnesse ;
 First got with guile, and then preferu'd with dread,
 And after spent with pride and lauishnesse,
 Leauing / behind them grieffe and heauinesse.
 Infinite mischiefes of them do arize, 110
 Strife ; and debate, bloudshed, and bitternesse,
 Outrageous wrong, and hellish couetize ;
 That noble heart as great dishonour doth despize.

Ne thine be kingdomes, ne the scepters thine ;
 But realmes and rulers thou doest both confound,
 And loyall truth to treason doest incline ;
 Witnesse the guiltlesse blood pourd oft on ground,
 The crowned often flaine, the slayer croud,
 The sacred Diademe in peeces rent,
 And purple robe gored with many a wound ; 120
 Castles surprizd, great cities sackt and brent :
 So mak'ft thou kings, & gaynest wrongfull gouernement.

Long were to tell the troublous stormes, that tosse
 The priuate state, and make the life vnswet :
 Who swelling sayles in Caspian sea doth crosse,
 And in frayle wood on *Adrian* gulfe doth fleet,

l. 100, 'kingdowes' (sic) : l. 111, , for ; : *ib.*, 'blood' : l. 112, ; for, :
 l. 113, 'in' : l. 117, 'blood' : l. 121, 'citties' : l. 122, 'gouernmēt.'

Doth not, I weene, fo many euils meet.
 Then *Mammon* waxing wroth, And why then, faid,
 Are mortall men fo fond and vndiscreet,
 So euill thing to feeke vnto their ayd, 130
 And hauing not complaine, and hauing it vpbraid ?

Indeede (quoth he) through fowle intemperaunce,
 Frayle men are oft captiu'd to couetife :
 But would they thinke, with how small allowaunce
 Vntroubled Nature doth her felfe fuffife,
 Such superfluties they would defpife,
 Which with sad cares empeach our natieue ioyes :
 At the well head the pureft ftreames arife :
 But mucky filth his branching armes annoyes, 139
 And with vncomely weedes the gentle waue accloyes./

The antique world, in his firft flowring youth,
 Found no defect in his Creatours grace,
 But with glad thanks, and vnreproued truth,
 The gifts of foueraigne bountie did embrace :
 Like Angels life was then mens happy cace ;
 But later ages pride, like corn-fed fteed,
 Abufd her plenty, and fat fwolne encrease
 To all licentious luft, and gan exceed
 The meafure of her meane, and naturall firft need.

Then gan a curfed hand the quiet wombe 150
 Of his great G[r]andmother with fteele to wound,
 And the hid treafures in her fared tombe,
 With Sacriledge to dig. Therein he found
 Fountaines of gold and filuer to abound,

1 128, 'fayd': l. 131, 'vpbrayd': l. 142, 'Fownd . . . Creators':
 145, 'guifts . . . foueraigne bounty': l. 153, 'fownd': l. 154, 'abownd.'

Of which the matter of his huge desire
 And pompous pride eftsoones he did compound ;
 Then auarice gan through his veines inspire
 His greedy flames, and kindled life-deuouring fire.

Sonne (said he then) let be thy bitter scorne,
 And leaue the rudenesse of that antique age 160
 To them, that liu'd therein in state forlorne ;
 Thou that doest liue in later times, muſt wage
 Thy workes for wealth, and life for gold engage.
 If then thee liſt my offred grace to vſe,
 Take what thou pleaſe of all this ſurpluſage ;
 If thee liſt not, leaue haue thou to reſuſe :
 But thing reſuſed, do not afterward accuſe.

Me liſt not (ſaid the Elfin knight) receaue
 Thing offred, till I know it well be got,
 Ne wote I, but thou diſt theſe goods bereaue 170
 From rightfull owner by vnrighteous lot,
 Or / that bloud guiltineſſe or guile them blot.
 Perdy (quoth he) yet neuer eye did vew,
 Ne tounge did tell, ne hand theſe handled not,
 But faſe I haue them kept in ſecret mew,
 From heauens fight, and powre of all which thẽ purſew.

What ſecret place (quoth he) can ſafely hold
 So huge a maſſe, and hide from heauens eye ?
 Or where haſt thou thy wonne, that ſo much gold
 Thou canſt preferue from wrong and robbery? 180

l. 156, 'compound': l. 159, 'lett': l. 160, 'that' accepted from '90 :
 l. 169, 'gott': l. 171, 'lott': l. 172, 'blood . . . blott'—'guiltineſſe' accepted
 from 1609 (as before) for 'guiltneſſe' of '90 and '96 : l. 173, 'qd. . . eie':
 l. 174, 'tong': l. 176, 'heuens . . . al . . . purſew': l. 177, 'qd.' and so
 l. 181 : l. 178, 'cie.'

Come thou (quoth he) and see. So by and by
 Through that thicke couert he him led, and found
 A darkefome way, which no man could descry,
 That deepe descended through the hollow ground,
 And was with dread and horror compassed around.

At length they came into a larger space,
 That stretcht it selfe into an ample plaine,
 Through which a beaten broad high way did trace,
 That streight did lead to *Plutoes* griesly raine :
 By that wayes side, there fate infernall Payne, 190
 And fast beside him sat tumultuous Strife :
 The one in hand an yron whip did straine,
 The other brandished a bloody knife,
 And both did gnash their teeth, & both did threaten life.

On thother side in one confort there fate,
 Cruell Reuenge, and rancorous Despight,
 Disloyall Treafon, and hart-burning Hate,
 But gnawing Gealofie out of their fight
 Sitting alone, his bitter lips did bight,
 And trembling Feare still to and fro did fly, 200
 And found no place, where safe he shroud him might :
 Lamenting Sorrow, did in darknesse lye,
 And Shame his vgly face did hide from liuing eye. /

And ouer them sad horror with grim hew,
 Did alwayes fore, beating his yron wings ;

l. 182, '*thick . . . found*': l. 184, '*deep . . . ground*': l. 185, '*horror . . . around*': l. 187, '*playne*': l. 189, '*rayne*': l. 190, '*internall*'—Collier ineptly emends '*eternal*': l. 192, '*strayne*': l. 198, '*Gealofy*': l. 201, : for , : l. 202, , for . : *ib.*, '*darknes*': l. 203, '*shame*': l. 204, '*horror*': l. 205, '*alwayes*.'

And after him Owles and Night-rauens flew,
 The hatefull messengers of heauy things,
 Of death and dolour telling sad tidings ;
 Whiles sad *Celeno*, sitting on a clift,
 A song of bale and bitter sorrow sings, 210
 That hart of flint a sunder could haue rift :
 Which hauing ended, after him she flyeth swift.

All these before the gates of *Pluto* lay,
 By whom they passing, spake vnto them nought.
 But th'Elfin knight with wonder all the way
 Did feed his eyes, and fild his inner thought.
 At last him to a litle dore he brought,
 That to the gate of Hell, which gaped wide,
 Was next adioyning, ne them parted ought :
 Betwixt them both was but a litle stride, 220
 That did the house of Richeffe from hell-mouth diuide.

Before the dore sat felse-consuming Care,
 Day and night keeping wary watch and ward,
 For seare leaft Force or Fraud should vnaware
 Breake in, and spoile the treasure there in gard :
 Ne would he suffer Sleepe once thither-ward
 Approach, albe his drowfie den were next ;
 For next to death is Sleepe to be compard :
 Therefore his house is vnto his annex ;
 Here Sleep, there Richeffe, & Hel-gate thê both betwext.

So foone as *Mammon* there arriu'd, the dore 231
 To him did open, and afforded way ;

l. 208, 'dolor': l. 209, 'clifte': l. 211, 'sonder . . . rifte': l. 212,
 'swifte': l. 219, 'nought': l. 221, 'hellmouth': l. 226, 'thether-ward':
 l. 227, 'drowfy': l. 230, 'Helgate': l. 231, 'ariud.'

Him followed eke Sir *Guyon* euermore,
 Ne darkenesse him, ne daunger might dismay.
 Soone / as he entred was, the dore streight way
 Did shut, and from behind it forth there lept
 An vgly feend, more fowle then dismall day,
 The which with monstrous stalke behind him stept,
 And euer as he went, dew watch vpon him kept.

Well hoped he, ere long that hardy ghest, 240
 If euer couetous hand, or lustfull eye,
 Or lips he layd on thing, that likt him best,
 Or euer sleepe his eye-strings did vntye,
 Should be his pray. And therefore still on hye
 He ouer him did hold his cruell clawes,
 Threatning with greedy gripe to do him dye
 And rend in peeces with his raucous pawes,
 If euer he transgreft the fatall *Stygian* lawes.

That houfes forme within was rude and strong,
 Like an huge caue, hewne out of rocky clift, 250
 From whose rough vault the ragged breaches hong,
 Embost with massy gold of glorious gift,
 And with rich metall loaded euery rift,
 That heauy ruine they did seeme to threat ;
 And ouer them *Arachne* high did lift
 Her cunning web, and spred her subtile net, (Iet.
 Enwrapped in fowle fmoke and clouds more black then

Both roofe, and floore, and wals were all of gold,
 But ouergrowne with dust and old decay,

l. 236, 'shutt': l. 243, 'ciestrings': l. 246, 'doe': l. 250, 'Lyke . . .
 clifte': l. 252, 'guifte': l. 253, 'riste': l. 255, 'liste': l. 256, 'nett':
 l. 257, 'Iett.'

And hid in darkenesse, that none could behold 260
 The hew thereof : for vew of chearefull day
 Did neuer in that houle it selfe display,
 But a faint shadow of vncertain light ;
 Such as a lamp, whose life does fade away :
 Or as the Moone cloathed with cloudy night,
 Does shew to him, that walkes in feare and sad affright. /

In all that rowme was nothing to be seene,
 But huge great yron chefts and coffers strong,
 All bard with double bends, that none could weene
 Them to efforce by violence or wrong ; 270
 On euery side they placed were along.
 But all the ground with sculs was scattered,
 And dead mens bones, which round about were flong,
 Whose liues, it seemed, whilome there were shed,
 And their vile carcases now left vnburied.

They forward passe, ne *Guyon* yet spoke word,
 Till that they came vnto an yron dore,
 Which to them opened of his owne accord,
 And shewd of richesse such exceeding store,
 As eye of man did neuer see before ; 280
 Ne euer could within one place be found,
 Though all the wealth, which is, or was of yore,
 Could gathered be through all the world around,
 And that aboue were added to that vnder ground.

The charge thereof vnto a couetous Spright
 Commaunded was, who thereby did attend,

l. 270, : for ; : l. 272, 'ground' : l. 273, 'flög' : l. 280, 'etc,' and
 , for ; : l. 281, 'fownd' : l. 283, 'around' : l. 284, 'ground.

And warily awaited day and night,
 From other couetous feends it to defend,
 Who it to rob and ranfacke did intend.
 Then *Mammon* turning to that warriour, said ; 290
 Loe here the worldes blis, loe here the end,
 To which all men do ayme, rich to be made :
 Such grace now to be happy, is before thee laid.

Certes (said he) I n'll thine offred grace,
 Ne to be made so happy do intend :
 Another blis before mine eyes I place,
 Another happinesse, another end.
 To / them, that list, these base regards I lend :
 But I in armes, and in atchieuements braue,
 Do rather choose my flitting houres to spend, 300
 And to be Lord of those, that riches haue,
 Then them to haue my selfe, and be their seruile sclaue.

Thereat the feend his gnathing teeth did grate,
 And grieu'd, so long to lacke his greedy pray ;
 For well he weened, that so glorious bayte
 Would tempt his guest, to take thereof assay :
 Had he so doen, he had him snatcht away,
 More light then Culuer in the Faulcons fist.
 Eternall God thee saue from such decay.
 But whenas *Mammon* saw his purpose mist, 310
 Him to entrap vnwares another way he wist.

Thence forward he him led, and shortly brought
 Vnto another rowme, whose dore forthright,

l. 290, '*Hammon*,' but corrected in 'Faults escaped': l. 292, '*al* . . .
doe': l. 294, '*sayd*': l. 295, '*doe*': l. 297, '*happines*': l. 304, '*greedie*':
 l. 312, '*ledd*.'

To him did open, as it had beene taught :
 Therein an hundred raunges weren pight,
 And hundred fornaces all burning bright ;
 By euery fornace many feends did bide,
 Deformed creatures, horrible in fight ;
 And euery feend his bufie paines applide,
 To melt the golden metall, ready to be tride. 320

One with great bellowes gathered filling aire,
 And with forst wind the fewell did inflame ;
 Another did the dying bronds repaire
 With yron touns, and sprinckled oft the fame
 With liquid waues, fiers *Vulcans* rage to tame,
 Who maiftring them, renewd his former heat ;
 Some fcumd the droffe, that from the metall came ;
 Some ftird the molten owre with ladles great ;
 And euery one did fwincke, and euery one did fweat. /

But when as earthly wight they present faw, 330
 Gliftring in armes and battailous aray
 From their whot worke they did themfelues withdraw
 To wonder at the fight : for till that day,
 They neuer creature faw, that came that way.
 Their staring eyes sparckling with feruent fire,
 And vgly shapes did nigh the man difmay,
 That were it not for fhame, he would retire,
 Till that him thus befpoke their foueraigne Lord & fire.

l. 316, 'fournaces': l. 317, 'fournace . . . feendes . . . byde': l. 319, 'applyde': l. 320, 'tryde': l. 321, 'ayre': l. 323, 'repayre': l. 324, 'dying tongs' [sic]: ib., 'ofte': l. 326, 'mayftring': l. 330, 'an': l. 332, 'work': l. 334, 'cam': l. 335, 'fyre': l. 337, 'retyre': l. 338, 'foueraigne . . . fyre.'

Behold, thou Faeries sonne, with mortall eye,
 That liuing eye before did neuer see: 340
 The thing, that thou didst craue so earnestly,
 To weet, whence all the wealth late shewd by mee,
 Proceeded, lo now is reueald to thee.
 Here is the fountaine of the worldes good :
 Now therefore, if thou wilt enriched bee,
 Auise thee well, and chaunge thy wilfull mood,
 Least thou perhaps hereafter wish, and be withstood.

Suffice it then, thou Money God (quoth hee)
 That all thine idle offers I refuse.
 All that I need I haue ; what needeth mee 350
 To couet more, then I haue cause to vse ?
 With such vaine shewes thy worldlings vile abuse :
 But giue me leaue to follow mine emprise.
Mammon was much displeas'd, yet no'te he chuse,
 But beare the rigour of his bold mesprise,
 And thence him forward led, him further to entife.

He brought him through a darksome narrow strait,
 To a broad gate, all built of beaten gold :
 The gate was open, but therein did wait
 A sturdy villein, striding stiffe and bold, 360
 As / if that highest God defie he would ;
 In his right hand an yron club he held,
 But he himselfe was all of golden mould,

l. 348, 'qd.' : l. 349, 'ydle' : l. 352, 'vyle' : l. 355, 'mesprise'—accepted for misprint 'mesprise' of '96 : l. 356, 'ledd' : l. 357, 'strayt' : l. 359, 'wayt' : l. 360, 'sturdie . . . stryding' : l. 361, 'if' accepted from '90 : *ib.*, 'that' for 'the' as in '90 and '96, but corrected in 'Faults escaped' : l. 363, 'And' for 'But' : *ib.*, 'yron' [*sic*].

Yet had both life and fence, and well could weld
That curfed weapon, when his cruell foes he queld.

Disdayne he called was, and did difdaine
To be fo cald, and who fo did him call :
Sterne was to looke, and full of stomacke vaine,
His portance terrible, and stature tall,
Far passing th'hight of men terrestriall ; 370
Like an huge Gyant of the *Titans* race,
That made him scorne all creatures great and small,
And with his pride all others powre deface : (place.
More fit amongst blacke fiendes, then men to haue his

Soone as those glitterand armes he did espye,
That with their brightnesse made that darknesse light,
His harmefull club he gan to hurtle hye,
And threaten batteill to the Faery knight ;
Who likewise gan himselfe to batteill dight,
Till *Mammon* did his hafty hand withhold, 380
And counfeld him abstaine from perilous fight :
For nothing might abash the villein bold,
Ne mortall steele emperce his miscreated mould.

So hauing him with reason pacifide,
And the fiers Carle commaunding to forbear,
He brought him in. The rowme was large and wide,
As it some Gyeld or solemne Temple wear :
Many great golden pillours did vpbeare
The massy roofe, and riches huge fustayne,
And euery pillour decked was full deare 390

l. 366, '*disdayne*' : l. 368, '*his*' for '*to*' : *ib.*, '*vayne*' : l. 374, '*fitt*' :
l. 376, '*darknes*' : l. 384, '*pacifyde*' : l. 386, '*wyde*.'

With crownes and Diademes, & titles vaine,
Which mortall Princes wore, whiles they on earth did
rayne. /

A route of people there assembled were,
Of euery fort and nation vnder skye,
Which with great vprore preaced to draw nere
To th'vpper part, where was aduanced hye
A stately siege of soueraigne maiestye ;
And thereon sat a woman gorgeous gay,
And richly clad in robes of royaltie,
That neuer earthly Prince in such aray 400
His glory did enhance, and pompous pride display.

Her face right wondrous faire did seeme to bee,
That her broad beauties beam great brightnes threw
Through the dim shade, that all men might it see :
Yet was not that fame her owne natie hew,
But wrought by art and counterfetted shew,
Thereby more louers vnto her to call ;
Nath'lesse most heauenly faire in deed and vew
She by creation was, till she did fall ; (all.
Thēceforth she fought for helps, to cloke her crime with-

There, as in gliftring glory she did sit, 411
She held a great gold chaine ylincked well,
Whose vpper end to highest heauen was knit,
And lower part did reach to lowest Hell ;
And all that preace did round about her swell,
To catchen hold of that long chaine, thereby
To clime aloft, and others to excell :

l. 410, no, after 'helps' : l. 411, no, after 'There' : *ib.*, 'fitt' : l. 413,
'knitt' : l. 415, 'round' : l. 417, 'climbe.'

That was *Ambition*, rash desire to fly,
And every lincke thereof a step of dignity.

Some thought to raise themselves to high degree, 420
By riches and vnrighteous reward,
Some by close shouldring, some by flatteree ;
Others through friends, others for base regard ;
And ' all by wrong wayes for themselves prepart.
Those that were vp themselves, kept others low,
Those that were low themselves, held others hard,
Ne suffred them to rise or greater grow,
But every one did striue his fellow downe to throw.

Which whenas *Guyon* saw, he gan inquire,
What meant that preace about that Ladies throne,
And what she was that did so high aspire. 431
Him *Mammon* answered ; That goodly one,
Whom all that folke with such contention,
Do flocke about, my deare my daughter is ;
Honour and dignitie from her alone,
Deriued are, and all this worldes blis
For which ye men do striue : few get, but many mis,

And faire *Philotime* she rightly hight,
The fairest wight that wonneth vnder skye,
But that this darksome neather world her light 440
Doth dim with horroure and deformitie,

L 419, 'linck' : L 423, 'friendes' : L 424, 'wales' : L 431, 'aspyre' :
L 432, , for ; : L 434, , in '96 by error after 'my' ; ib., , for ; : L 437,
'doe . . . gett' : L 438, 'fayre' : L 440, 'darksom' : L 441, 'horroure'
deformity.'



Worthy of heauen and hye felicitie,
 From whence the gods haue her for enuy thrust :
 But sith thou hast found fauour in mine eye,
 Thy spouse I will her make, if that thou lust,
 That she may thee aduance for workes and merites iust.

Gramercy *Mammon* (said the gentle knight)
 For so great grace and offred high estate ;
 But I, that am fraile flesh and earthly wight,
 Vnworthy match for such immortall mate 450
 My selfe well wote, and mine vnequall fate;
 And were I not, yet is my trouth yplight,
 And loue auowd to other Lady late,
 That to remoue the same I haue no might :
 To chaunge loue causelesse is reproch to warlike knight./

Mammon emmoued was with inward wrath ;
 Yet forcing it to faine, him forth thence led
 Through griesly shadowes by a beaten path,
 Into a gardin goodly garnished
 With hearbs and fruits, whose kinds mote not be red :
 Not such, as earth out of her fruitfull wombe 461
 Throwes forth to men, sweet and well fauoured,
 But direfull deadly blacke both leafe and bloom,
 Fit to adorne the dead, and decke the drery toombe.

There mournfull *Cypresse* grew in greatest store,
 And trees of bitter *Gall*, and *Heben* sad,
 Dead sleeping *Poppy*, and blacke *Hellebore*,
 Cold *Coloquintida*, and *Tetra* mad,

l. 442, 'Worthie . . . heuen': l. 446, 'merits': l. 457, 'fayne . . . ledd':
 l. 460, '& . . . redd': l. 462, no , after 'men': *ib.*, 'fauored': l. 463,
 'black,' and so l. 467 : l. 464, 'deck.'

Mortall *Samnitis*, and *Cicuta* bad,
 With which th'vniust *Atheniens* made to dy 470
 Wife *Socrates*, who thereof quaffing glad
 Pourd out his life, and laft Philosophy
 To the faire *Critias* his deareft Belamy.

The *Gardin* of *Proserpina* this hight ;
 And in the midft thereof a filuer feat,
 With a thicke Arber goodly ouer dight,
 In which she often vsd from open heat
 Her selfe to shroud, and pleasures to entreat.
 Next thereunto did grow a goodly tree,
 With braunches broad dispredd and body great, 480
 Clothed with leaues, that none the wood mote see
 And loaden all with fruit as thicke as it might bee.

Their fruit were golden apples gliftring bright,
 That goodly was their glory to behold,
 On earth like neuer grew, ne liuing wight
 Like euer saw, but they from hence were fold ;
 For / those, which *Hercules* with conquest bold
 Got from great *Atlas* daughters, hence began,
 And planted there, did bring forth fruit of gold :
 And those with which th'*Eubæan* young man wan
 Swift *Atalanta*, when through craft he her out ran. 491

Here also sprong that goodly golden fruit,
 With which *Acontius* got his louver trew,

l. 470, 'With which'—corrected for 'Which with' of '90 and '96: l. 473, 'fayre': l. 474, 'Gardin'—misprinted 'Gordin' in '96: l. 476, 'thick,' and so l. 482: l. 480, 'dispredd': l. 489, no punctuation after 'gold': l. 490, after 'those,' and 'the' for 'th'—'the' corrected in 'Faults escaped.'

Whom he had long time fought with fruitlesse fuit :
 Here eke that famous golden Apple grew,
 The which emongst the gods false *Ate* threw ;
 For which th'*Idæan* Ladies disagreed,
 Till partiall *Paris* dempt it *Venus* dew,
 And had of her, faire *Helen* for his meed,
 That many noble *Greekes* and *Troians* made to bleed.

The warlike Elfe, much wondred at this tree, 507
 So faire and great, that shadowed all the ground,
 And his broad braunches, laden with rich fee,
 Did stretch themselues without the vtmost bound
 Of this great gardin, compast with a mound,
 Which ouer-hanging, they themselues did steepe,
 In a blacke flood which flow'd about it round ;
 That is the riuier of *Cocytus* deepe,
 In which full many soules do endlesse waile and weepe.

Which to behold, he clomb vp to the banke, 510
 And looking downe, saw many damned wights,
 In those sad waues, which direfull deadly stanke,
 Plonged continually of cruell Sprights,
 That with their pitteous cryes, and yelling shrights,
 They made the further shore resounden wide :
 Emongst the rest of those same ruefull fights,
 One curfed creature, he by chaunce espide,
 That drenched lay full deepe, vnder the Garden side. /

Deepe was he drenched to the vpmost chin,
 Yet gaped still, as coueting to drinke 520

l. 496, 'Gods': l. 499, 'fayre,' and so l. 502: l. 509, 'wayle': l. 510,
 'bancke': l. 511, 'wights': l. 512, 'stancke': l. 513, 'Sprights': l. 514,
 'pitteous . . . shrights': l. 516, 'fights': l. 520, no, after 'still.'

Of the cold liquor, which he waded in,
 And stretching^a forth his hand, did often thinke
 To reach the fruit, which grew vpon the brincke :
 But both the fruit from hand, and floud from mouth
 Did flie abacke, and made him vainely fwinke :
 The whiles he steru'd with hunger and with drouth
 He daily dyde, yet neuer throughly dyen couth.

The knight him feeling labour so in vaine,
 Aftk who he was, and what he ment thereby :
 Who groning deepe, thus answerd him againe ; 530
 Most curfed of all creatures vnder skye,
 Lo *Tantalus*, I here tormented lye :
 Of whom high *Ioue* wont whylome feasted bee,
 Lo here I now for want of food doe dye :
 But if that thou be such, as I thee see,
 Of grace I pray thee, giue to eat and drinke to mee.

Nay, nay, thou greedie *Tantalus* (quoth he)
 Abide the fortune of thy present fate,
 And vnto all that liue in high degree,
 Ensamble be of mind intemperate, 540
 To teach them how to vse their present state.
 Then gan the curfed wretch aloud to cry,
 Accusing higheft *Ioue* and gods ingrate,
 And eke blaspheming heauen bitterly,
 As authour of vniustice, there to let him dye.

He lookt a little further, and espyde
 Another wretch, whose carkaffe deepe was drent

l. 521, 'liquour' : l. 524, 'flood' : l. 525, 'fly . . . fwincke' : l. 537,
 'greedy' : l. 540, 'more' [sic] : l. 542, 'aloud' : l. 547, 'carcas.'

Within the riuer, which the fame did hyde :
 But both his hands moſt filthy feculent,
 Aboue / the water were on high extent, 550
 And faynd to waſh themſelues inceſſantly ;
 Yet nothing cleaner were for ſuch intent,
 But rather fowler ſeemed to the eye ;
 So loſt his labour vaine and idle induſtry.

The knight him calling, aſked who he was,
 Who liſting vp his head, him anſwerd thus :
 I *Pilate* am, the falſeſt Iudge, alas,
 And moſt vniuſt, that by vnrighteous
 And wicked doome, to Iewes deſpiteous
 Deliuered vp the Lord of life to die, 560
 And did acquite a murdrer felonous ;
 The whiles my hands I waſht in puritie,
 The whiles my foule was ſoyld with foule iniquitie.

Infinite moe, tormented in like paine
 He there beheld, too long here to be told :
 Ne *Mammon* would there let him long remaine,
 For terrour of the tortures manifold,
 In which the damned ſoules he did behold,
 But roughly him beſpake. Thou fearefull foole,
 Why takeſt not of that ſame fruit of gold, 570
 Ne fitteſt downe on that ſame ſiluer ſtoole,
 To reſt thy wearie perſon, in the ſhadow coole.

l. 549, '*handes*': l. 551, , for ; : l. 553, *ibid.* : l. 554, '*ydle*': l. 557,
 , inserted after '*am*,' though not in either '90 or '96: l. 558, nō , after
 '*vniuſt*': l. 559, *ibid.* after '*doome*': l. 560, '*dye*': l. 561, , for ; : l. 562,
 '*handes* . . . *purity*': l. 563, '*foule iniquity*': l. 566, '*remayne*': l. 570,
fruite': l. 572, '*weary*.'

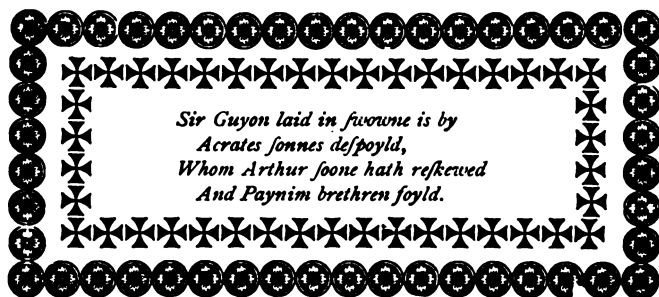
All which he did, to doe him deadly fall
 In frayle intemperance through finfull bayt ;
 To which if he inclined had at all,
 That dreadfull feend, which did behind him wayt,
 Would him haue rent in thousand peeces strait :
 But he was warie wife in all his way,
 And well perceiued his deceitfull sleight,
 Ne suffred lust his safetie to betray ; 580
 So goodly did beguile the Guyler of the pray. /

And now he has so long remained there,
 That vitall powres gan wexe both weake and wan,
 For want of food, and sleepe, which two vpbeare,
 Like mightie pillours, this fraile life of man,
 That none without the same endure can.
 For now three dayes of men were full outwrought,
 Since he this hardie enterprize began :
 For thy great *Mammon* fairely he besought, 589
 Into the world to guide him backe, as he him brought.

The God, though loth, yet was constrained t'obay,
 For lenger time, then that, no liuing wight
 Below the earth, might suffred be to stay :
 So backe againe, him brought to liuing light.
 But all so foone as his enfeebled spright
 Gan sucke this vitall aire into his brest,
 As ouercome with too exceeding might,
 The life did flit away out of her nest,
 And all his senses were with deadly fit opprest. 599

l. 573, 'due': l. 574, 'intemperaunce': l. 575, 'inclyned': l. 578,
 'wary': l. 580, 'safety': l. 581, 'his': l. 582, 'theare': l. 585, 'frayle':
 l. 588, 'hardy': l. 589, 'fayrely': l. 590, 'guyde': l. 591, 'constraynd':
 l. 596, 'ayre': l. 599, 'sences.'

Cant. VIII.



AND is there care in heauen ? and is there loue
 In heauenly spirits to these creatures bace,
 That may compassion of their euils moue ?
 There is : else much more wretched were the cace
 Of / men, then beafts. But ô th'exceeding grace 10
 Of highest God, that loues his creatures so,
 And all his workes with mercy doth embrace,
 That blessed Angels, he sends to and fro,
 To serue to wicked man, to serue his wicked foe.

How oft do they, their siluer bowers leaue,
 To come to succour vs, that succour want ?
 How oft do they with golden pineons, cleaue
 The flitting skyes, like flying Pursuiuant,
 Against foule feends to aide vs militant ?
 They for vs fight, they watch and dewly ward, 20
 And their bright Squadrons round about vs plant,

l. 2, 'laid' : l. 8, 'euilles' : l. 10, no , after 'men' : *ib.*, 'O' : l. 16,
 , for ? : l. 19, 'foule . . . ayd . . . militant.'

And all for loue, and nothing for reward :
O why should heauenly God to men haue such regard ?

During the while, that *Guyon* did abide
In *Mamons* house, the Palmer, whom whyleare
That wanton Mayd of passage had denide,
By further searck had passage found elsewhere,
And being on his way, approached neare,
Where *Guyon* lay in traunce, when suddenly
He heard a voice, that called loud and cleare, 30
Come hither, come hither, o come hastily ;
That all the fields refounded with the ruefull cry.

The Palmer lent his eare vnto the noyce,
To weet, who called so importunely :
Againe he heard a more efforced voyce,
That bad him come in haste. He by and by
His feeble feet directed to the cry ;
Which to that shadie delue him brought at last,
Where *Mammon* earst did funne his threasury :
There the good *Guyon* he found slumbring fast 40
In senselesse dreame ; which fight at first him fore aghast.

Befide his head there sate a faire young man,
Of wondrous beautie, and of freshest yeares,
Whose tender bud to blossome new began,
And flourish faire aboue his equall peares ;
His snowy front curled with golden heares,
Like *Phæbus* face adorn'd with sunny rayes,
Diuinely shone, and two sharpe winged sheares,

1. 23, 'heuenly,' and, for ? : 1. 29, 'suddenly' : 1. 30, 'voyce . . .
loud' : 1. 31, 'hether' (bis), O' : 1. 38, 'shady' : 1. 41, 'fencles' : 1. 42,
'fitt' : 1. 43, 'beauty.'

Decked with diuerſe plumes, like painted Iayes,
Where fixed at his backe, to cut his ayerie wayes. 50

Like as *Cupido* on *Idæan* hill,
When hauing laid his cruell bow away,
And mortall arrowes, wherewith he doth fill
The world with murderous spoiles and bloudie pray,
With his faire mother he him dights to play,
And with his goodly ſiſters, *Graces* three;
The Goddeſſe pleaſed with his wanton play,
Suffers her ſelfe through ſleepe beguild to bee,
The whiles the other Ladies mind their merry glee.

Whom when the Palmer ſaw, abaſht he was 60
Through feare and wonder, that he nought could ſay,
Till him the child beſpoke, Long lackt, alas,
Hath bene thy faithfull aide in hard affay,
Whileſ deadly fit thy pupill doth diſmay;
Behold this heauie fight, thou reuerend Sire,
But dread of death and dolour do away;
For life ere long ſhall to her home retire,
And he that breathleſſe ſeemes, ſhal corage bold reſpire.

The charge, which God doth vnto me arret,
Of his deare ſafetie, I to thee commend; 70
Yet will I not forgoe, ne yet forget
The care thereof my ſelfe vnto the end,
But / euermore him ſuccour, and defend
Againſt his foe and mine: watch thou I pray;
For euill is at hand him to offend.

l. 50, 'ayery': l. 54, 'bloody': l. 59, 'theyr mery': l. 61, 'fear': l. 62,
'childe': l. 64, 'fitt': l. 65, 'heauy': l. 66, 'dolor': l. 68, 'Jeems': l. 69,
'arrett': l. 70, 'ſafety': l. 71, 'forgett.'

So hauing faid, eftfoones he gan display
His painted nimble wings, and vanisht quite away.

The Palmer seeing his left empty place,
And his slow eyes beguiled of their fight,
Woxe fore affraid, and standing still a space, 80
Gaz'd after him, as fowle escapt by flight ;
At laft him turning to his charge behight,
With trembling hand his troubled pulfe gan try ;
Where finding life not yet diflodged quight,
He much reioyft, and courd it tenderly,
As chicken newly hatcht, from dreaded destiny.

At laft he fpide, where towards him did pace
Two Paynim knights, all armd as bright as fkie,
And them befide an aged Sire did trace,
And farre before a light-foot Page did flie, 90
That breathed strife and troublous enmitie ;
Those were the two fonnes of *Acrates* old
Who meeting earft with *Archimago* flie,
Foreby that idle ftrond, of him were told,
That he, which earft them combattet, was *Guyon* bold.

Which to auenge on him they dearely vowd,
Where euer that on ground they mote him fynd ;
Falso *Archimage* prouokt their courage prowde,
And ftryfull *Atin* in their stubborne mynd
Coles of contention and whot vengeance tynd. 100
Now bene they come, whereas the Palmer fate,
Keeping that flombred corfe to him affynd ;

l. 78, 'leftie': l. 79, 'eies': l. 88, 'al': l. 90, 'far . . . foote': l. 96, 'dearly': l. 97, 'find': l. 98, 'prouokte . . . corage': l. 99, 'ftryful . . . mind': l. 100, 'what vengeance tind': l. 102, 'affind.'

Well knew they both his perfon, fith of late
With him in bloudie armes they rafhly did debate./

Whom when *Pyrrhochles* faw, inflam'd with rage,
That fire he foule befpace, Thou dotard vile,
That with thy bruteneffe fhendft thy comely age,
Abandone foone, I read, the caitiue fpoile
Of that fame outcaft carkaffe, that erewhile
Made it felfe famous through false trechery, 110
And crownd his coward creft with knightly ftile ;
Loe where he now inglorious doth lye,
To proue he liued ill, that did thus foully dye.

To whom the Palmer fearelefse answered ;
Certes, Sir knight, ye bene too much to blame,
Thus for to blot the honour of the dead,
And with foule cowardize his carkaffe shame,
Whofe liuing hands immortalizd his name.
Vile is the vengeance on the afhes cold,
And enuie bafe, to barke at fleeping fame : 120
Was neuer wight, that treafon of him told ;
Your felfe his prowefse prou'd & found him fiers & bold.

Then faid *Cymochles* ; Palmer, thou doeft dote,
Ne canft of prowefse, ne of knighthood deeme,
Saue as thou feeft or hearft. But well I wote,
That of his puiſſance tryall made extreeme ;

l. 104, 'bloody': l. 105, 'Pyrochles': l. 106, 'fowl': l. 108, 'Abandon
. . . caitiue': l. 109, 'carcas': l. 113, 'proue . . . il . . . foully': l. 114,
'fearelefse,' and, for ;: l. 116, 'blott . . . honor': l. 117, 'foule . . .
carcas': l. 118, 'handes': l. 119, 'vengeaunce': l. 120, 'enuy': l. 123,
, for ;: l. 126, 'puiſſaunce.'

Yet gold all is not, that doth golden seeme,
 Ne all good knights, that shake well speare and shield:
 The worth of all men by their end esteeme,
 And then due praise, or due reproch them yield; 130
 Bad therefore I him deeme, that thus lies dead on
 field.

Good or bad (gan his brother fierce reply)
 What doe I recke, sith that he dyde entire?
 Or what doth his bad death now satisfy
 The greedy hunger of reuenging ire,
 Sith / wrathfull hand wrought not her owne desire?
 Yet since no way is left to wreake my spight,
 I will him reauue of armes, the victors hire,
 And of that shield, more worthy of good knight;
 For why should a dead dog be deckt in armour bright?

Faire Sir, said then the Palmer suppliaunt, 141
 For knighthoods loue, do not so foule a deed,
 Ne blame your honour with so shamefull vaunt
 Of vile reuenge. To spoile the dead of weed
 Is sacrilege, and doth all finnes exceed;
 But leaue these relicks of his liuing might,
 To decke his herce, and trap his tombe-blacke steed.
 What herce or steede (said he) should he haue dight,
 But be entombed in the rauens or the kight?

With that, rude hand vpon his shield he laid, 150
 And th'other brother gan his helme vnlace,

l. 127, 'al': l. 128, 'S': l. 130, 'dew' (bis): l. 132, 'fiers,' and
 no (): l. 133, 'dide': l. 135, 'yre': l. 137, 'lefte': l. 141, 'Fayr':
 l. 142, 'fowle': l. 143, 'honor': l. 147, 'tomblacke'—see Glossary *s.v.*
 on this.

Both fiercely bent to haue him difaraid ;
 Till that they fpyde, where towards them did pace
 An armed knight, of bold and bounteous grace,
 Whose squire bore after him an heben launce,
 And couerd shield. Well kend him fo farre space
 Th'enchaunter by his armes and amenaunce,
 When vnder him he saw his Lybian steed to prounce.

And to thofe brethren said, Rife rife byliue,
 And vnto battell doe your felues addresse ; 160
 For yonder comes the prowefte knight aliue,
 Prince *Arthur*, flowre of grace and nobileffe,
 That hath to Paynim knights wrought great diftrefse
 And thousand Sar'zins foully donne to dye.
 That word fo deepe did in their harts imprefse,
 That both eftfoones vpfstarted furiously,
 And gan themfelues prepare to battell greedily. /

But fierce *Pyrrhochles*, lacking his owne fword,
 The want thereof now greatly gan to plaine,
 And *Archimage* befought, him that afford, 170
 Which he had brought for *Braggadocchio* vaine.
 So would I (faid th'enchaunter) glad and faine
 Beteeme to you this fword, you to defend,
 Or ought that elfe your honour might maintaine,
 But that this weapons powre I well haue kend,
 To be contrarie to the worke, which ye intend.

For that fame knights owne fword this is of yore,
 Which *Merlin* made by his almightie art

l. 153, 'spyde': l. 156, 'far': l. 159, 'fayd': l. 160, 'batteill,' and so
 l. 167: l. 163, 'gret': l. 164, 'fowly': l. 168, 'fiers': l. 174, 'els . . .
 honor': l. 176, 'contrary': l. 178, , after 'art.'

For that his nourfling, when he knighthood fwore,
 Therewith to doen his foes eternall fmart. 180
 The metall firft he mixt with *Medæwart*,
 That no enchauntment from his dint might faue;
 Then it in flames of *Aetna* wrought apart,
 And feuen times dipped in the bitter waue
 Of hellifh *Styx*, which hidden vertue to it gaue.

The vertue is, that neither fteele, nor ftone
 The ftroke thereof from entrance may defend;
 Ne euer may be vfed by his fone,
 Ne forft his rightfull owner to offend,
 Ne euer will it breake, ne euer bend. 190
 Wherefore *Morddure* it rightfully is hight.
 In vaine therefore, *Pyrrhochles*, fhould I lend
 The fame to thee, againft his lord to fight,
 For fure it would deceiue thy labour, and thy might.

Foolifh old man, faid then the Pagan wroth,
 That weeneft words or charmes may force withftond:
 Soone fhalt thou fee, and then beleue for troth,
 That I can carue with this inchaunted brond
 His / Lords owne flefh. Therewith out of his hond
 That vertuous fteele he rudely fnatcht away, 200
 And *Guyons* fhield about his wrefte he bond;
 So readie dight, fierce battaile to affay,
 And match his brother proud in battailous array.

By this that ftraunger knight in prefence came,
 And goodly falued them; who nought againe

l. 187, 'entraunce': l. 189, 'rightful': l. 192, 'Pyrrhochles': l. 194,
 'labor': l. 202, 'ready': l. 203, 'array.'

Him answered, as courtesie became,
 But with sterne lookes, and stomachous disdaine,
 Gaue signes of grudge and discontentment vaine :
 Then turning to the Palmer, he gan spy
 Where at his feete, with sorrowfull demaine 210
 And deadly hew, an armed corse did lye,
 In whose dead face he red great magnanimity.

Said he then to the Palmer, Reuerend fyre,
 What great misfortune hath betidd this knight ?
 Or did his life her fatall date expyre,
 Or did he fall by treason, or by fight ?
 How euer, sure I rew his pitteous plight.
 Not one, nor other, (said the Palmer graue)
 Hath him befallne, but cloudes of deadly night
 A while his heauie eylids couer'd haue, 220
 And all his senses drowned in deepe senselesse waue.

Which, those his cruell foes, that stand hereby,
 Making aduantage, to reuenge their spight,
 Would him disarme, and treaten shamefully,
 Vnworthy vsage of redoubted knight.
 But you, faire Sir, whose honorable fight
 Doth promise hope of helpe, and timely grace,
 Mote I beseech to succour his sad plight,
 And by your powre protect his feeble cace.
 First praise of knighthood is, foule outrage to deface. /

l. 210, 'feet . . . demayne' : l. 212, 'redd' : l. 218, 'sayd' and no () :
 l. 220, 'heauy' : l. 221, 'fences . . . deep . . . senselesse' : l. 222, 'his cruell'
 accepted from 'Faults escaped,' being 'fame' in '90 and '96, while in 1609,
 1611, we read—'*Which those same foes, that doen awaite hereby*'—which
 gives a glimpse of how their editors manipulated their text, oblivious of
 the author's own corrections : l. 223, 'aduantage' : l. 225, 'Vnworthie' :
 l. 226, 'honourable' : l. 230, 'praysse . . . foule.'

Palmer, (saide he) no knight so rude, I weene, 231
 As to doen outrage to a sleeping ghost :
 Ne was there euer noble courage seene,
 That in aduantage would his puissance boist :
 Honour is leaft, where oddes appeareth most.
 May be, that better reason will affwage,
 The rash reuengers heat. Words well difpoft
 Haue fecret powre, t'appeafe inflamed rage :
 If not, leaue vnto me thy knights laft patronage.

Tho turning to thofe brethren, thus befpoke, 240
 Ye warlike payre, whose valorous great might
 It feemes, iuft wrongs to vengeance doe prouoke,
 To wreake your wrath on this dead seeming knight,
 Mote ought allay the ftorme of your despight,
 And fettle patience in fo furious heat ?
 Not to debate the chalenge of your right,
 But for this carkaffe pardon I entreat,
 Whom fortune hath alreadie laid in loweft feat.

To whom *Cymochles* faid ; For what art thou,
 That mak'ft thy felfe his dayes-man, to prolong 250
 The vengeance preft ? Or who fhall let me now,
 On this vile bodie from to wreake my wrong,
 And make his carkaffe as the outcaft dong ?
 Why fhould not that dead carrion fatisfie
 The guilt, which if he liued had thus long,

l. 233, 'corage' : l. 234, 'puiffaunce' : l. 236, 'bee . . . afwage' : l. 238, 'fecrets' : l. 242, 'wronges . . . vengeance' : l. 247, 'carcas,' and so l. 253 : l. 248, 'already' : l. 249, , for ; : l. 251, 'vengeaunce' : l. 252, 'body . . . wreak' : l. 254, 'fatisfye.'

His life for due reuenge should deare abie ?
The trespasse still doth liue, albe the perfon die.

Indeed (then said the Prince) the euill donne
Dyes not, when breath the bodie first doth leaue,
But from the grandfyre to the Nephewes sonne, 260
And all his seed the curse doth often cleaue,
Till / vengeance vtterly the guilt bereaue :
So streightly God doth iudge. But gentle knight,
That doth against the dead his hand vpreare,
His honour staines with rancour and despight,
And great disparagment makes to his former might.

Pyrrhocles gan reply the second time,
And to him said, Now felon sure I read,
How that thou art partaker of his crime :
Therefore by *Termagaunt* thou shalt be dead. 270
With that his hand, more sad then lomp of lead,
Vplifting high, he weened with *Morrdure*,
His owne good sword *Morddure*, to cleaue his head.
The faithfull steele such treafon no'uld endure,
But swaruing from the marke, his Lords life did assure.

Yet was the force so furious and so fell,
That horse and man it made to reele aside ;
Nath'lesse the Prince would not forsake his fell :
For well of yore he learned had to ride,

l. 256, 'dew . . . aby'e': l. 257, 'trespas. . . albee . . . dye': l. 258, no
(): l. 259, 'body': l. 261, 'feede': l. 262, 'vengeaunce': l. 264, 'vpreare'
—another of Spenser's non-rhymes—should be 'vpheau'e' of course: l. 267,
'tyme': l. 269, 'cryme': l. 275, 'Lordes': l. 277, 'afyde': l. 279,
'ryde.'

But full of anger fiercely to him cride ; 280
False traitour miscreant, thou broken hast
The law of armes, to strike foe vndefide.
But thou thy treasons fruit, I hope, shalt taste
Right sowre, & feele the law, the which thou hast defast.

With that his balefull speare, he fiercely bent
Against the Pagans brest, and therewith thought
His curd life out of her lodge haue rent :
But ere the point arriued, where it ought,
That seuen-fold shield, which he from *Guyon* brought
He cast betwene to ward the bitter stound: 290
Through all those foldes the steelehead passage wrought
And through his shoulder pierft ; wherwith to grouñ
He groueling fell, all gored in his gushing wound./

Which when his brother saw, fraught with great griefe
And wrath, he to him leaped furiously,
And fowly said, By *Mahoune*, curfed thiefe,
That direfull stroke thou dearely shalt aby.
Then hurling vp his harmefull blade on hye,
Smote him fo hugely on his haughtie creft,
That from his faddle forced him to fly : 300
Elfe mote it needes downe to his manly breft
Haue cleft his head in twaine, and life thence difpoffeft.

Now was the Prince in daungerous distresse,
Wanting his sword, when he on foot should fight :
His fingle speare could doe him small redresse,
Against two foes of so exceeding might,

l. 280, '*fierfly . . . cryde*': l. 281, '*miscreaunt*': l. 286, '*Pagons*,
but corrected in 'Faults escaped': l. 287, '*lodg*': l. 289, '*seuen fold*':
l. 290, '*between . . . flound*': l. 292, '*perfi*': l. 298, '*hy*': l. 301, '*Els*.'



The leaft of which was match for any knight.
 And now the other, whom he earft did daunt,
 Had reard himfelfe againe to cruell fight,
 Three times more furious, and more puiffaunt, 310
 Vnmindfull of his wound, of his fate ignoraunt.

So both attonce him charge on either fide,
 With hideous ftrokes, and importable powre,
 That forced him his ground to trauerfe wide,
 And wifely watch to ward that deadly ftowre :
 For in his fhield, as thicke as stormie fhower,
 Their ftrokes did raine, yet did he neuer quaille,
 Ne backward fhinke, but as a ftedefaft towre,
 Whom foe with double battry doth affaile, (auaile.
 Them on her bulwarke beares, and bids them nought

So ftoutly he withftood their ftong affay, 321
 Till that at laft, when he aduantage fpyde,
 His poinant fpeare he thruft with puiffant fway
 At proud *Cymochles*, whiles his fhield was wyde,
 That / through his thigh the mortall fteele did gryde:
 He fwaruing with the force, within his flefh
 Did breake the launce, and let the head abyde :
 Out of the wound the red bloud flowed frefh,
 That vnderneath his feet foone made a purple plefh.

Horribly then he gan to rage, and rayle, 330
 Curfing his Gods, and himfelfe damning deepe :

l. 309, '*cruel*': l. 312, '*fyde*': l. 314, '*wyde*': l. 316, '*on*' in 1609:
 l. 319, '*doubly*,' but corrected in '*Faults efcafed*': l. 323, '*poynant*':
 l. 328, '*blood*,' and so l. 332: l. 330, '*rayle*' is in 1609 '*traile*,' but see
 ssary, s.v., on this.

Als when his brother saw the red bloud rayle
 Adowne so fast, and all his armour steepe,
 For very felnesse lowd he gan to weepe,
 And said, Caytiue, curse on thy cruell hond,
 That twife hath sped ; yet shall it not thee keepe
 From the third brunt of this my fatall brond : (stond.
 Loe where the dreadfull Death behind thy backe doth

With that he strooke, and th'other strooke withall,
 That nothing seem'd mote beare so monstrous might :
 The one vpon his couered shield did fall, 341
 And glauncing downe would not his owner byte :
 But th'other did vpon his troncheon smyte,
 Which hewing quite a sunder, further way
 It made, and on his hacqueton did lyte,
 The which diuiding with importune sway,
 It seizd in his right side, and there the dint did stay.

Wyde was the wound, and a large lukewarme flood,
 Red as the Rose, thence gushed grieuously ;
 That when the Paynim spyde the streaming blood,
 Gaue him great hart, and hope of victory. 351
 On th'other side, in huge perplexity,
 The Prince now stood, hauing his weapon broke ;
 Nought could he hurt, but still at ward did ly :
 Yet with his troncheon he so rudely stroke
Cymochles twife, that twife him forst his foot reuoke. /

Whom when the Palmer saw in such distresse,
 Sir *Guyons* sword he lightly to him raught,

l. 336, '*spedd*' : l. 338, '*Lo . . . behynd*' : l. 340, '*seemd . . . monstrous*' :
 l. 354, '*warde*'

And said ; faire Son, great God thy right hand bleffe,
 To vse that sword so wisely as it ought. 360
 Glad was the knight, & with fresh courage fraught,
 When as againe he armed felt his hond ;
 Then like a Lion, which hath long time faught
 His robbed whelpes, and at the last them fond
 Emongst the shepheard fwaynes, then wexeth wood &
 yond.

So fierce he laid about him, and dealt blowes
 On either side, that neither mayle could hold,
 Ne shield defend the thunder of his throwes :
 Now to *Pyrrhochles* many strokes he told ;
 Eft to *Cymochles* twise so many fold : 370
 Then backe againe turning his busie hond,
 Them both atonce compeld with courage bold,
 To yield wide way to his hart-thrilling brond ;
 And though they both stood stiffe, yet could not both
 withstond.

As saluage Bull, whom two fierce mastiues bayt,
 When rancour doth with rage him once engore,
 Forgets with warie ward them to awayt,
 But with his dreadfull hornes them driues afore,
 Or flings aloft, or treads downe in the flore,
 Breathing out wrath, and bellowing disdaine, 380
 That all the Forrest quakes to heare him rore :
 So rag'd Prince *Arthur* twixt his foemen twaine,
 That neither could his mightie puiffance sustaine.

l. 359, '*fayre Sonne . . . god . . . hād*' : l. 360, '*so well, as he it ought*'—
 Dr. Morris inadvertently records our text as if it belonged to 1609 only :
 l. 363, '*Lyon*' : l. 372, '*atonce*' : l. 377, '*wary warde*' : l. 379, '*treads*' :
 l. 381, '*forest*' : l. 383, '*puiffance*.'

But euer at *Pyrrhochles* when he smit,
 Who *Guyons* shield cast euer him before,
 Whereon the Faery Queenes pourtraict was writ,
 His hand relented, and the stroke forbore,
 And / his deare hart the picture gan adore,
 Which oft the Paynim fau'd from deadly stowre.
 But him henceforth the same can faue no more ; 390
 For now arriued is his fatall howre,
 That no'te auoyded be by earthly skill or powre.

For when *Cymochles* saw the fowle reproch,
 Which them appeached, prickt with guilty shame,
 And inward grieve, he fiercely gan approach,
 Refolu'd to put away that loathly blame,
 Or dye with honour and desert of fame ;
 And on the hauberk stroke the Prince so fore,
 That quite disparted all the linked frame,
 And pierced to the skin, but bit no more, 400
 Yet made him twise to reele, that neuer moou'd afore.

Whereat renfierst with wrath and sharpe regret,
 He stroke so hugely with his borrowd blade,
 That it empierst the Pagans burganet,
 And cleauing the hard steele, did deepe inuade
 Into his head, and cruell passage made (ground,
 Quite through his braine. He tombling downe on
 Breathd out his ghost, which to th'infernall shade
 Fast flying, there eternall torment found,
 For all the finnes, wherewith his lewd life did abound.

L. 384, '*smitt*': l. 385, . for , ; l. 386, '*writt*': l. 394, '*guiltie*'—
 misprinted '*gulty*' in '96: l. 398, '*haubergk*': l. 400, '*not thore*': l. 402,
 '*sharp*': l. 404, '*empreft*,' but corrected in '*Faults escaped*': l. 407, '*brayne*.'

Which when his german saw, the stony feare, 411
 Ran to his hart, and all his sence dismayd,
 Ne thenceforth life ne courage did appeare,
 But as a man, whom hellish feends haue frayd,
 Long trembling still he stood : at last thus sayd ;
 Traytour what hast thou doen ? how euer may
 Thy curfed hand so cruelly haue fwayd
 Against that knight : Harrow and well away,
 After so wicked deed why liu'ft thou lenger day? /

With that all desperate as loathing light, 420
 And with reuenge defiring soone to dye,
 Assembling all his force and vtmost might,
 With his owne sword he fierce at him did flye,
 And strooke, and foynd, and lasht outrageously,
 Withouten reason or regard. Well knew
 The Prince, with patience and sufferaunce fly
 So hasty heat soone cooled to subdew :
 Tho when this breathlesse woxe, that batteil gan renew.

As when a windy tempest bloweth hye,
 That nothing may withstand his stormie stowre, 430
 The cloudes, as things affrayd, before him flye ;
 But all so soone as his outrageous powre
 Is layd, they fiercely then begin to shoure,
 And as in scorne of his spent stormy spight,
 Now all attonce their malice forth do poure ;

l. 413, '*corage*' : l. 414, '*feendes*' : l. 415, '*stooode*' : l. 418, '*Harrow*' misprinted '90 and '96 '*Horrow*,' but corrected in '*Faults escaped*' : l. 419, '*deede*' : l. 421, '*defyring*' : l. 423, '*swerd*' : l. 426, '*pacience*' : l. 428, '*this*' in '90, '96, 1609, 1611—corrected in 1679 '*he*' : l. 431, '*cloudes* . . . *things*' : l. 433, '*shoure*.'

So did Sir *Guyon* beare himselfe in fight,
And suffred rash *Pyrrhocles* waft his idle might.

At last when as the Sarazin perceiu'd,
How that straunge sword refusd, to serue his need,
But when he stroke most strong, the dint deceiu'd, 440
He flong it from him, and deuoyd of dreed,
Vpon him lightly leaping without heed,
Twixt his two mighty armes engrasped fast,
Thinking to ouerthrow and downe him tred :
But him in strength and skill the Prince surpast,
And through his nimble sleight did vnder him down cast.

Nought booted it the Paynim then to striue ;
For as a Bittur in the Eagles claw,
That may not hope by flight to scape aliue,
Still waites for death with dread and trembling aw ;
So / he now subiect to the victours law, 451
Did not once moue, nor vpward cast his eye,
For vile disdaine and rancour, which did gnaw
His hart in twaine with sad melancholy,
As one that loathed life, and yet despisd to dye.

But full of Princely bounty and great mind,
The Conquerour nought cared him to slay,
But casting wrongs and all reuenge behind,
More glory thought to giue life, then decay,

L. 436—in my copy of '96 a contemporary MS. reads over '*Sir Guyon*' erased '*the prince now*,' in 1609 '*Prince Arthur*': l. 437, '*yde*': l. 439, '*neede*': l. 444, '*ouerthrowe*': *ib.*, '*tred*'—Dr. Morris queries '? *treed*,' but Spenser was not finical in his rhymes, and also trusted to the readers' ears: l. 448, '*clawe*': l. 450, '*waytes*': l. 455, '*de/py/d*': l. 456, '*princely*': l. 458, '*wronges*,' and so l. 464.

And said, Paynim, this is thy dismall day ; 460
 Yet if thou wilt renounce thy miscreaunce,
 And my trew liegeman yield thy selfe for ay,
 Life will I graunt thee for thy valiaunce,
 And all thy wrongs will wipe out of my fouenaunce.

Foole (said the Pagan) I thy gift defye,
 But vse thy fortune, as it doth befall,
 And say, that I not ouercome do dye,
 But in despight of life, for death do call.
 Wroth was the Prince, and fory yet withall,
 That he so wilfully refused grace ; 470
 Yet sith his fate so cruelly did fall,
 His shining Helmet he gan soone vnlace,
 And left his headlesse body bleeding all the place.

By this Sir *Guyon* from his traunce awakt,
 Life hauing maistered her senœlesse foe ;
 And looking vp, when as his shield he lakt,
 And sword saw not, he wexed wondrous woe :
 But when the Palmer, whom he long ygoe
 Had lost, he by him spide, right glad he grew,
 And said, Deare fir, whom wandring to and fro 480
 I long haue lackt, I ioy thy face to vew ;
 Firme is thy faith, whom daunger neuer fro me drew. /

But read what wicked hand hath robbed mee
 Of my good sword and shield ? The Palmer glad,
 With so freth hew vprising him to see,
 Him answered ; faire sonne, be no whit sad

l. 460, '*sayd*,' and so l. 465 : l. 467, '*doe*,' and so l. 468 : l. 475, '*maystered*': l. 479, '*Had*'—misprinted '*Haft*' in '96: *ib.*, '*spyde*': l. 480, '*saide*': l. 483, , after '*read*': l. 485, '*vprysing*': l. 486, '*sayre*.'

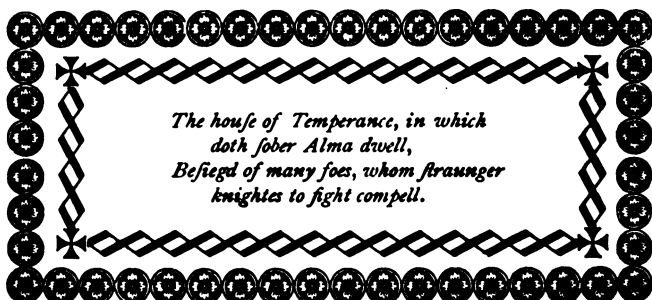
For want of weapons, they shall soone be had.
 So gan he to discourse the whole debate,
 Which that straunge knight for him sustained had,
 And those two Sarazins confounded late, 490
 Whose carcafes on ground were horribly prostrate.

Which when he heard, and saw the tokens trew,
 His hart with great affection was embayd,
 And to the Prince bowing reuerence dew,
 As to the Patrone of his life, thus sayd ;
 My Lord, my liege, by whose most grations ayd
 I liue this day, and see my foes subdewd,
 What may suffise, to be for meede repayd
 Of so great graces, as ye haue me shewd,
 But to be euer bound 500

To whom the Infant thus, Faire Sir, what need
 Good turnes be counted, as a seruile bond,
 To bind their doers, to receiue their meede ?
 Are not all knights by oath bound, to withstond
 Oppressours powre by armes and puissant hond ?
 Suffise, that I haue done my dew in place.
 So goodly purpose they together fond,
 Of kindnesse and of curteous aggrace ;
 The whiles false *Achimarge* and *Atin* fled apace. 509

l. 494, misprinted 'with bowing' in '90 and '96, but corrected in 'Faults escaped': l. 500, on this broken line (as before), see the new Life in Vol. I.: l. 501, 'Fayre': l. 503, 'doers . . . meed': l. 504, 'knightes.'

Cant. / IX.



OF all Gods workes, which do this world adorne,
 There is no one more faire and excellent,
 Then is mans body both for powre and forme,
 Whiles it is kept in sober gouernment ;
 But none then it, more fowle and indecent, 10
 Distempred through misrule and passions bace :
 It growes a Monster, and incontinent
 Doth loofe his dignitie and natiue grace.
 Behold, who list, both one and other in this place.

After the Paynim brethren conquer'd were,
 The *Briton* Prince recou'ring his stolne sword,
 And *Guyon* his lost shield, they both yfere
 Forth passed on their way in faire accord,

l. 6, 'doe': l. 10, 'incedent,' but corrected in 'Faults escaped': l. 13,
 'dignity': l. 18, 'fayre,' and so l. 24.

Till him the Prince with gentle court did bord ;
 Sir knight, mote I of you this curt'ie read, 20
 To weet why on your shield so goodly scord
 Beare ye the picture of that Ladies head ?
 Full liuely is the semblaunt, though the substance dead.

Faire Sir (said he) if in that picture dead
 Such life ye read, and vertue in vaine shew,
 What mote ye weene, if the trew liuely-head
 Of that most glorious visage ye did vew ? /
 But if the beautie of her mind ye knew,
 That is her bountie, and imperiall powre,
 Thousand times fairer then her mortall hew, 30
 O how great wonder would your thoughts deuoure,
 And infinite desire into your spirite poure !

She is the mightie Queene of *Faerie*,
 Whose faire retrait I in my shield do beare ;
 She is the flowre of grace and chastitie,
 Throughout the world renowned far and neare,
 My lief, my liege, my Soueraigne, my deare,
 Whose glory shineth as the morning starre,
 And with her light the earth enlumines cleare ;
 Far reach her mercies, and her prayes farre, 40
 As well in state of peace, as puiffaunce in warre.

Thrive happy man, (said then the *Briton* knight)
 Whom gracious lot, and thy great valiaunce

l. 20, 'court'fy': l. 24, 'sayd': l. 28, 'beauty': l. 29, 'bounty': l. 32, misprinted 'poure' in '90: l. 33, 'Faery': l. 34, 'retraitt . . . doe': l. 35, 'chastity (sic)': l. 37, 'lief' is 'life' in 1679: *ib.*, 'Soueraigne': l. 40, 'praises': l. 43, 'lott.'

Haue made thee souldier of that Princeffe bright,
 Which with her bounty and glad countenance
 Doth bleffe her seruants, and them high aduaunce.
 How may straunge knight hope euer to aspire,
 By faithfull seruice, and meet amenance,
 Vnto such blisse? sufficient were that hire
 For losse of thousand liues, to dye at her desire. 50

Said *Guyon*, Noble Lord, what meed so great,
 Or grace of earthly Prince so soueraine,
 But by your wondrous worth and warlike feat
 Ye well may hope, and easely attaine?
 But were your will, her fold to entertaine,
 And numbred be mongst knights of *Maydenhed*,
 Great guerdon, well I wote, should you remaine,
 And in her fauour high be reckoned,
 As *Arthegall*, and *Sophy* now beene honored. /

Certes / (then said the Prince) I God auow, 60
 That fith I armes and knighthood first did plight,
 My whole desire hath beene, and yet is now,
 To serue that Queene with all my powre and might.
 Now hath the Sunne with his lamp-burning light,
 Walkt round about the world, and I no lesse,
 Sith of that Goddesse I haue fought the fight,
 Yet no where can her find: such happinesse
 Heauen doth to me enuy, and fortune fauourlesse.

l. 44, 'soldier': l. 45, 'countenance': l. 48, 'meete amenaunce': l. 50, 'die': l. 53, 'and' misprinted 'add' in '90: l. 58, 'faueur': l. 59, 'Arthogall': l. 63, 'al': ll. 64-5—

'Seven times the Sunne . . .
 Hath walkt'

l. 68, 'Heuen': *ib.*—*qy.* 'faueur lesse'?

Fortune, the foe of famous cheuifaunce

Seldome (said *Guyon*) yields to vertue aide, 70

But in her way throwes mischief and mischaunce,

Whereby her course is stopt, and passage staid.

But you faire Sir, be not herewith dismaid,

But constant keepe the way, in which ye stand ;

Which were it not, that I am else delaid

With hard aduventure, which I haue in hand,

I labour would to guide you through all Faery land.

Gramercy Sir (said he) but mote I wote,

What straunge aduventure do ye now purfew ?

Perhaps my succour, or aduizement meete 80

Mote stead you much your purpose to subdew.

Then gan Sir *Guyon* all the story shew

Of false *Acrasia*, and her wicked wiles,

Which to auenge, the Palmer him forth drew,

From Faery court. So talked they, the whiles

They wasted had much way, and measurd many miles.

And now faire *Phæbus* gan decline in haft

His weary wagon to the Westerne vale,

Whenas they spide a goodly castle, plaft

Foreby a riuer in a pleasaunt dale, / 90

Which choosifg for that euenings hospitale,

They thither marcht : but when they came in fight,

And from their sweaty Courfers did auale,

They found the gates fast barred long ere night,

And euery loup fast lockt, as fearing foes despight.

l. 73, , after 'you' : l. 75, 'els' : l. 77, 'al Fary' : l. 78, 'wote'—still another of Spenser's non-rhymes—should be 'wete' : l. 79, 'doe' : l. 87, 'Phoebus . . . hafte' : l. 89, 'plafte' : l. 92, 'thether.'

Which when they saw, they weened fowle reproch
 Was to them doen, their entrance to forfall,
 Till that the Squire gan nigher to approach ;
 And wind his horne vnder the castle wall,
 That with the noife it shooke, as it would fall : 100
 Eftsoones forth looked from the highest spire
 The watch, and lowd vnto the knights did call,
 To weete, what they so rudely did require.
 Who gently answered, They entrance did desire.

Fly fly, good knights, (said he) fly fast away
 If that your liues ye loue, as meete ye should ;
 Fly fast, and saue yourselues from neare decay,
 Here may ye not haue entrance, though we would :
 We would and would againe, if that we could ;
 But thousand enemies about vs raue, 110
 And with long siege vs in this castle hould :
 Seuen yeares this wize they vs besieged haue, (saue.
 And many good knights slaine, that haue vs fought to

Thus as he spoke, loe with outrageous cry
 A thousand villeins round about them swarmd
 Out of the rockes and caues adioyning nye,
 Vile caytiue wretches, ragged, rude, deformd,
 All threatning death, all in straunge manner armd,
 Some with vnweldy clubs, some with long speares,
 Some rusty kniues, some staues in fire warmd. 120
 Sterne was their looke, like wild amazed steares,
 Staring with hollow eyes, and stiffe vpstanding heares.

l. 97, '*entraunce*,' and so ll. 104 and 108: l. 100, ; for , : and . for : (colon):
 l. 118, '*threatning*': l. 120, '*knifes* . . . *fier*.'

Fierfly / at first those knights they did assaile,
 And droue them to recoile : but when againe
 They gaue fresh charge, their forces gan to faile,
 Vnhable their encounter to sustaine ;
 For with such puiſſaunce and impetuous maine
 Those Champions broke on them, that forst them fly,
 Like scattered Sheepe, whenas the Shepherds swaine
 A Lyon and a Tigre doth espye, 130
 With greedy pace forth rushing from the forest nye.

A while they fled, but soone returnd againe
 With greater fury, then before was found ;
 And euermore their cruell Capitaine
 Sought with his raskall routs t'enclose them round,
 And ouerrun to tread them to the ground.
 But soone the knights with their bright-burning blades
 Broke their rude troupes, and orders did confound,
 Hewing and flashing at their idle shades ; (fades.
 For though they bodies seeme, yet substance from them

As when a swarme of Gnats at euentide 141
 Out of the fennes of Allan do arise,
 Their murmuring small trompets founden wide,
 Whiles in the aire their clustring army flies,
 That as a cloud doth seeme to dim the skies ;
 Ne man nor beaſt may reſt, or take repaſt,
 For their sharpe wounds, and noyous iniuries,

l. 123, 'assaile': l. 125, 'fayle': l. 128, 'thē': l. 129, 'Sheepe' misprinted 'Speepe' in '96: *ib.*, 'Shepherds': l. 133, 'found': l. 134, 'Capitaine' accepted from 1609 for 'Captaine' of '90 and '96: l. 135, 'round': l. 136, 'ouerrōne . . . ground': l. 138, 'confound': l. 140, 'seeme . . . substance': l. 142, 'doe': l. 143, 'trompetts founden.'

Till the fierce Northerne wind blustring blast
Doth blow them quite away, and in the *Ocean* cast.

Thus when they had that troublous rout disperst, 150
Vnto the castle gate they come againe,
And entraunce crau'd, which was denied erst.
Now when report of that their perilous paine, /
And combrous conflict, which they did sustaine,
Came to the Ladies eare, which there did dwell,
She forth issewed with a goodly traine
Of Squires and Ladies equipaged well,
And entertained them right fairely, as befell.

Alma she called was, a virgin bright ;
That had not yet felt *Cupid*es wanton rage, 160
Yet was she woo'd of many a gentle knight,
And many a Lord of noble parentage,
That sought with her to lincke in marriage :
For she was faire, as faire mote euer bee,
And in the flowre now of her freshest age ;
Yet full of grace and goodly modestee,
That euen heauen reioyced her sweete face to see.

In robe of lilly white she was arayd,
That from her shoulder to her heele downe raught,
The traine whereof loose far behind her strayd, 170
Braunched with gold & pearle, most richly wrought,
And borne of two faire Damfels, which were taught,
That seruice well. Her yellow golden heare
Was trimly wouen, and in tresses wrought,

l. 153, '*perious*': l. 154, '*conflict*' is misprinted '*comflict*' in '96: l. 156, '*shee*,' and so ll. 161, 164, 177, 180 and 185: l. 161, '*woood*': l. 167, '*heuen*': l. 171, '*perle*.'

Ne other tyre she on her head did weare,
But crowned with a garland of sweete Rosiere.

Goodly she entertaind those noble knyghts,
And brought them vp into her castle hall ;
Where gentle court and gracious delight
She to them made, with mildnesse virginall, 180
Shewing her selfe both wife and liberall :
There when they rested had a season dew,
They her befought of fauour speciall,
Of that faire Castle to affoord them vew ;
She graunted, & them leading forth, the same did shew.

Firft / she them led vp to the Castle wall,
That was so high, as foe might not it clime,
And all so faire, and sensible withall,
Not built of bricke, ne yet of stone and lime,
But of thing like to that *AEgyptian* slime, 190
Whereof king *Nine* whilome built *Babell* towre ;
But ô great pittie, that no lenger time
So goodly workmanship should not endure :
Soone it must turne to earth ; no earthly thing is sure.

The frame thereof seemd partly circulare,
And part triangulare : ô worke diuine ;
Those two the first and last proportions are,
The one imperfect, mortall, foeminine ;
Th'other immortall, perfect, masculine,
And twixt them both a quadrate was the base, 200
Proportioned equally by feuen and nine ;

l. 175, 'tire' : l. 176, 'Crown,' but corrected in 'Faults escaped' :
l. 186, 'him' : l. 188, Dr. Morris mistakenly records 1590 as mis-
printing 'sensible' : l. 191, , for ; : l. 192, 'O,' and so l. 196: *ib.*, 'a time'
in '90, but corrected in 'Faults escaped.'

Nine was the circle set in heauens place,
All which compacted made a goodly *Diapase*.

Therein two gates were placed seemly well :
The one before, by which all in did pas,
Did th'other far in workmanship excell ;
For not of wood, nor of enduring bras,
But of more worthy substance fram'd it was ;
Doubly disparted, it did locke and clofe,
That when it locked, none might thorough pas, 210
And when it opened, no man might it clofe,
Still open to their friends, and clofed to their foes.

Of hewen stone the porch was fairely wrought,
Stone more of vawle, and more smooth and fine,
Then Iet or Marble far from Ireland brought ;
Ouer the which was cast a wandring vine, /
Enchaced with a wanton yuie twine.
And ouer it a faire Portcullis hong,
Which to the gate directly did incline,
With comely compasse, and compacture strong, 220
Neither vnseemly short, nor yet exceeding long.

Within the Barbican a Porter fate;
Day and night duely keeping watch and ward,
Nor wight, nor word mote passe out of the gate,
But in good order, and with dew regard ;
Vtterers of secrets he from thence debard,
Bablers of folly, and blazers of crime.
His larumbell might lowd and wide be hard,

l. 202, 'fett': l. 203, 'Dyapase' in '90 and '96, but corrected in 'Faults escaped' of former 'diapase': l. 212, 'friendes': l. 213, 'fayrely': l. 215, 'Iett': l. 218, 'fayre': l. 227, 'cryme': l. 228, 'wyde.'

When cause requird, but neuer out of time ;
Early and late it rong, at euening and at prime. 230

And round about the porch on euery side
Twise sixteen warders sat, all armed bright
In gliftring steele, and strongly fortifide :
Tall yeomen seemed they, and of great might,
And were enraunged ready, still for fight.
By them as *Alma* passed with her guesstes,
They did obeysaunce, as befeemed right,
And then againe returned to their restes :
The Porter eke to her did lout with humble gestes.

Thence she them brought into a stately Hall, 240
Wherein were many tables faire dispred,
And ready dight with drapets festiuall,
Against the viaundes should be minifred.
At th'upper end there sate, yclad in red
Downe to the ground, a comely personage,
That in his hand a white rod menaged,
He Steward was hight *Diet* ; rype of age,
And in demeanure sober, and in counfell sage.

And / through the Hall there walked to and fro
A iolly yeoman, Marshall of the same, 250
Whose name was *Appetite* ; he did bestow
Both guesstes and meate, when euer in they came,
And knew them how to order without blame,
As him the Steward bad. They both attone
Did dewty to their Lady, as became ;

l. 229, 'requyrd' : l. 231, 'rownd . . . syde' : l. 232, 'fixteene . . . satt' :
l. 233, 'fortifyde' : l. 238, 'retourned' : l. 241, 'fayre' : l. 252, 'meate'
—1679 stupidly prints 'meet' : l. 254, 'badd.

Who passing by, forth led her guesstes anone
Into the kitchin rowme, ne spard for niceneffe none.

It was a vault ybuilt for great dispende,
With many raunges reard along the wall ;
And one great chimney, whose long tonnell thence,
The smoke forth threw. And in the midst of all 261
There placed was a caudron wide and tall,
Vpon a mighty furnace, burning whot,
More whot, then *Aetn'*, or flaming *Mongiball* :
For day and night it brent, ne ceased not,
So long as any thing it in the caudron got,

But to delay the heat, leaft by mischaunce
It might breake out, and set the whole on fire,
There added was by goodly ordinaunce,
An huge great paire of bellowes, which did styre 270
Continually, and cooling breath inspyre.
About the Caudron many Cookes accoyld,
With hookes and ladles, as need did require ;
The whiles the viandes in the vessell boyld
They did about their businesse sweate, and forely toylde.

The maister Cooke was cald *Concoction*,
A carefull man, and full of comely guise :
The kitchin Clerke, that hight *Digestion*,
Did order all th'Achates in seemely wise, /
And set them forth, as well he could deuise. 280
The rest had feuerall offices affind,
Some to remoue the scum, as it did rise ;

. l. 263, '*fornace . . . whott*,' and so '*whott*' in l. 264 : l. 266, '*gott*' :
f. 268, '*fyre*' : l. 270, '*payre*' : l. 273, '*requyre*' : l. 274, '*whyles . . .*
viandes' : l. 277, '*guysse*' : l. 278, '*clerke*' : l. 281, '*affynd*.'

Others to beare the fame away did mind ;
And others it to vse according to his kind.

But all the liquour, which was fowle and waft,
Not good nor seruiceable else for ought,
They in another great round vessell plaft,
Till by a conduit pipe it thence were brought :
And all the rest, that noyous was, and nought,
By secret wayes, that none might it espy, 290
Was close conuaid, and to the back-gate brought,
That cleped was *Port Esquiline*, whereby
It was auoided quite, and throwne out priuily.

Which goodly order, and great workmans skill
Whenas those knights beheld, with rare delight,
And gazing wonder they their minds did fill ;
For neuer had they seene so straunge a sight.
Thence backe againe faire *Alma* led them right,
And soone into a goodly Parlour brought, 300
That was with royall arras richly dight.
In which was nothing pourtrahed, nor wrought,
Not wrought, nor pourtrahed, but easie to be thought.

And in the midft thereof vpon the floure,
A louely beuy of faire Ladies fate,
Courtred of many a iolly Paramoure,
The which them did in modest wife amate,
And each one fought his Lady to aggrate :
And eke emongst them litle *Cupid* playd
His wanton sports, being returned late

l. 283, 'mynd' : l. 284, 'kynd' : l. 285, 'waste' : l. 287, 'round . . .
plaft' : l. 291, 'backgate' : l. 295, 'knightes' : l. 296, 'mindes' : l. 309,
'sportes . . . returned.'

From his fierce warres, and hauing from him layd 310
His cruell bow, wherewith he thousands hath dismayd.

Diuerse / delights they found them selues to please ;
Some song in sweet consort, some laught for ioy,
Some plaid with strawes, some idly sat at ease ;
But other some could not abide to toy,
All pleasaunce was to them grieve and annoy :
This frownd, that faund, the third for shame did blush,
Another seemed enuious, or coy,
Another in her teeth did gnaw a rush :
But at these straungers prefence euerie one did hush. 320

Soone as the gracious *Alma* came in place,
They all attonce out of their seats arose,
And to her homage made, with humble grace :
Whom when the knights beheld, they gan dispose
Themselues to court, and each a Damsell chose :
The Prince by chaunce did on a Lady light,
That was right faire and fresh as morning rose,
But somewhat fad, and solemne eke in sight,
As if some pensiue thought constrained her gentle spright.

In a long purple pall, whose skirt with gold, 330
Was fretted all about, she was arayd ;
And in her hand a Poplar braunch did hold :
To whom the Prince in courteous manner said ;
Gentle Madame, why beene ye thus dismayd,
And your faire beautie do with fadnesse spill ?
Liues any, that you hath thus ill apaid ?

l. 311, 'cruel' : l. 312, in 1590 mispagged '217' for '317' ; *ib.*, 'frownd' :
l. 314, 'ydly satt,' and , for ; : l. 317, 'fround' : l. 322, 'seates' : l. 325,
'damzell' : l. 333, 'prince . . . courteous maner sayd' : l. 334, 'dismayd' :
l. 335, 'dow . . . fadnes' : l. 336, 'apayd.'

Or doen you loue, or doen you lacke your will?
What euer be the cause, it fure befeemes you ill.

Faire Sir, (saide she halfe in difdainefull wife,)
How is it, that this word in me ye blame, 340
And in your selfe do not the same aduise?
Him ill befeemes, another's fault to name,
That may vnwares be blotted with the same:
Penfue I yeeld I am, and sad in mind,
Through great desire of glory and of fame:
Ne ought I weene are ye therein behind,
That haue twelue moneths fought one, yet no where
can her find.

The Prince was inly moued at her speach,
Well weeting trew, what she had rashly told;
Yet with faire samblaunt fought to hide the breach,
Which chaunge of colour did perforce vnfold, 351
Now seeming flaming whot, now stony cold.
Tho turning soft aside, he did inquire,
What wight she was, that Poplar braunch did hold:
It answered was, her name was *Prayf-desire*,
That by well doing fought to honour to aspire.

The whiles, the *Faerie* knight did entertaine
Another Damfell of that gentle crew,
That was right faire, and modest of demaine,

l. 337, 'you' from 1609 for 'your' of '90 and '96: *ib.*, 'lack': l. 338, 'bee': l. 339, 'Fayre': l. 340, Dr. Morris 'improves' 'word' into 'mood': l. 341, 'doe': l. 342, 'another's': l. 343, 'bee': l. 346, 'behynnd': l. 347, 'three years': l. 349, , for ;: l. 350, 'hyde': l. 352, 'whatt': l. 353, 'inqueryre': l. 355, 'Prayf-desire': l. 356, 'aspyre': l. 357, 'whyles . . . Faery . . . entertayne': l. 359, 'fayre . . . demayne.'

But that too oft she chaung'd her natue hew : 360
 Straunge was her tyre, and all her garment blew,
 Clofe round about her tuckt with many a plight :
 Vpon her fitt the bird, which shoneth vew,
 And keepes in couerts clofe from liuing wight,
 Did fit, as yet afhamd, how rude *Pan* did her dight.

So long as *Guyon* with her commoned,
 Vnto the ground she cast her modest eye,
 And euer and anone with rofie red
 The bashfull bloud her snowy cheekes did dye,
 That her became, as polisht yuory, 370
 Which cunning Craftesman hand hath ouerlayd
 With faire vermilion or pure Castory.
 Great wonder had the knight, to see the mayd
 So straungely passioned, and to her gently sayd,

Faire / Damzell, seemeth, by your troubled cheare,
 That either me too bold ye weene, this wise
 You to moleft, or other ill to feare
 That in the secret of your hart clofe lyes,
 From whence it doth, as cloud from sea arife.
 If it be I, of pardon I you pray ; 380
 But if ought else that I mote not deuife,
 I will, if please you it discure, assay,
 To ease you of that ill, so wisely as I may.

She answerd nought, but more abasht for shame,
 Held downe her head, the whiles her louely face

l. 362, 'round': l. 365, 'fitt': l. 367, 'ground': l. 368, 'rofy':
 l. 369, 'blood': l. 372, 'fayre': *ib.*, 'Castory'—misprinted 'lastery' in
 '90 and '96, but corrected in 'Faults escaped' of former: l. 374, 'said':
 l. 375, 'Fayre': *ib.*, 'cleare' [*sic*]: l. 379, 'aryse': l. 381, 'deuysse.'

The flashing bloud with blushing did inflame,
 And the strong passion mard her modest grace,
 That *Guyon* meruayld at her vncouth cace :
 Till *Alma* him bespake, why wonder yee
 Faire Sir at that, which ye so much embrace ? 390
 She is the fountaine of your modestee ;
 You shamefast are, but *Shamefastnesse* it selfe is shee.

Thereat the Elfe did blush in priuitee,
 And turnd his face away ; but she the same
 Dissembled faire, and faynd to ouersee.
 Thus they awhile with court and goodly game,
 Themselues did folace each one with his Dame,
 Till that great Ladie thence away them fought,
 To vew her castles other wondrous frame.
 Vp to a stately Turret she them brought, 400
 Ascending by ten steps of Alabaster wrought.

That Turrets frame most admirable was,
 Like higheft heauen compassed around.
 And lifted high aboue this earthly masse,
 Which it suruew'd, as hils doen lower ground ;
 But not on ground mote like to this be found,
 Not that which antique *Cadmus* whylome built
 In *Thebes*, which *Alexander* did confound ;
 Nor that proud towre of *Troy*, though richly guilt,
 From which young *Hectors* bloud by cruell *Greekes* was
 spilt. 410

The rooffe hereof was arched ouer head,
 And deckt with flowers and herbars daintily ;

l. 386, 'blood': l. 392, 'Shamefastnes': l. 399, 'Castles': l. 405, 'suruew':
 l. 410, 'blood.'

Two goodly Beacons, set in watches stead,
 Therein gaue light, and flam'd continually :
 For they of liuing fire most subtilly
 Were made, and set in filuer sockets bright,
 Couer'd with lids deuiz'd of substance fly,
 That readily they shut and open might.
 O who can tell the prayfes of that makers might !

Ne can I tell, ne can I stay to tell 420
 This parts great workmanship, & wondrous powre,
 That all this other worlds worke doth excell,
 And likest is vnto that heauenly towre,
 That God hath built for his owne blessed bowre.
 Therein were diuerse roomes, and diuerse stages,
 But three the chieftest, and of greatest powre,
 In which there dwelt three honorable fages,
 The wifest men, I weene, that liued in their ages.

Not he whome *Greece*, the Nourfe of all good arts,
 By *Phæbus* doome, the wifest thought aliue, 430
 Might be compar'd to these by many parts :
 Nor that sage *Pylia*n fyre, which did suruiue
 Three ages, such as mortall men contriue,
 By whose aduise old *Priams* cittie fell,
 With these in praise of pollicies mote striue.
 These three in these three roomes did sundry dwell,
 And counsell'd faire *Alma*, how to gouerne well.

The / first of them could things to come forefee :
 The next could of things present best aduize ;

l. 414, 'flamd': l. 419, ? for ! : l. 421, 'workeman/ship': l. 422, 'worldes': l. 425, 'diuers': l. 431, 'this': l. 436, 'roumes . . . fondry.'

The third things past could keepe in memoree, 440
So that no time, nor reason could arize,
But that the same could one of these comprize.
For thy the first did in the forepart sit,
That nought mote hinder his quicke preiudize :
He had a sharpe foresight, and working wit,
That neuer idle was, ne once could rest a whit.

His chamber was dispaigned all within,
With fundry colours, in the which were writ
Infinite shapes of things disperfed thin ;
Some such as in the world were neuer yit, 450
Ne can deuized be of mortall wit ;
Some daily seene, and knownen by their names,
Such as in idle fantasies doe flit :
Infernall Hags, *Centaur*s, feendes, *Hippodames*,
Apes, Lions, *Ægles*, Owles, fooles, louers, children,
Dames.

And all the chamber filled was with flies,
Which buzzed all about, and made such sound,
That they encombred all mens eares and eyes,
Like many swarmes of Bees assembled round,
After their hues with honny do abound : 460
All those were idle thoughts and fantasies,
Deuices, dreames, opinions vnfound,
Shewes, visions, sooth-fayes, and prophecies ;
And all that fained is, as leafings, tales, and lies.

l. 441, '*reason*'—Mr. J. P. Collier alleges that Drayton's copy of 1611 reads '*season*': l. 448, '*fondry*': l. 449, '*things*': l. 455, '*Ægles*.'

Emongft them all fate he, which wonned there,
 That hight *Phantaſtes* by his nature trew ;
 A man of yeares yet freſh, as mote appere,
 Of ſwarth complexion, and of crabbed hew, /
 That him full of melancholy did ſhew ;
 Bent hollow beetle browes, ſharpe ſtaring eyes, 470
 That mad or fooliſh ſeemd : one by his vew
 Mote deeme him borne with ill diſpoſed ſkyes,
 When oblique *Saturne* fate in the houſe of agonyes.

Whom *Alma* hauing ſhewed to her gueſtes,
 Thence brought thẽ to the ſecond roome, whoſe wals
 Were painted faire with memorable geſtes,
 Of famous Wifards, and with picturals
 Of Magiſtrates, of courts, of tribunals,
 Of commen wealthes, of ſtates, of pollicy,
 Of lawes, of iudgements, and of decretals ; 480
 All artes, all ſcience, all Philoſophy,
 And all that in the world was aye thought wittily.

Of thoſe that roome was full, and them among
 There ſate a man of ripe and perfect age,
 Who did them meditate all his life long,
 That through continuall praſtiſe and vſage,
 He now was growne right wiſe, and wondrous ſage.
 Great pleaſure had thoſe ſtranger knights, to ſee
 His goodly reaſon, and graue perſonage,
 That his diſciples both deſir'd to bee ; 490
 But *Alma* thence thẽ led to th'hindmoſt roome of three.

l. 466, , for ; : l. 473, '*th'houſe*' in 1609: l. 488, '*pleſure . . . knights*':
 490, '*deſyrd*' : l. 491, '*roume*.'

That chamber seemed ruinous and old,
 And therefore was remoued farre behind,
 Yet were the wals, that did the same vphold,
 Right firme & strong, though somewhat they declind;
 And therein fate an old old man, halfe blind,
 And all decrepit in his feeble corse,
 Yet liuely vigour rested in his mind,
 And recompens't him with a better sorse: 499
 Weake body well is chang'd for minds redoubled forse.

This / man of infinite remembrance was,
 And things foregone through many ages held,
 Which he recorded still, as they did pas,
 Ne suffred them to perish through long eld,
 As all things else, the which this world doth weld,
 But laid them vp in his immortall scrine,
 Where they for euer incorrupted dweld:
 The warres he well remembred of king *Nine*,
 Of old *Affaracus*, and *Inachus* diuine.

The yeares of *Nestor* nothing were to his, 510
 Ne yet *Mathusalem*, though longest liu'd;
 For he remembred both their infancies:
 Ne wonder then, if that he were depriu'd
 Of natieue strength now, that he them furuiu'd.
 His chamber all was hangd about with rolles,
 And old records from auncient times deriu'd,
 Some made in bookes, some in long parchmēt scrolles,
 That were all worme-eaten, and full of canker holes.

l. 493, 'far': l. 500, 'wells,' but corrected in 'Faults escaped': l. 501, 'remembraunce': l. 505, 'els': l. 511, no , after 'Mathusalem': l. 512, 'infancis': l. 515, 'rolls': l. 516, 'deriud': l. 517, 'lōg parchment scrolles': l. 518, 'worm-eaten.'

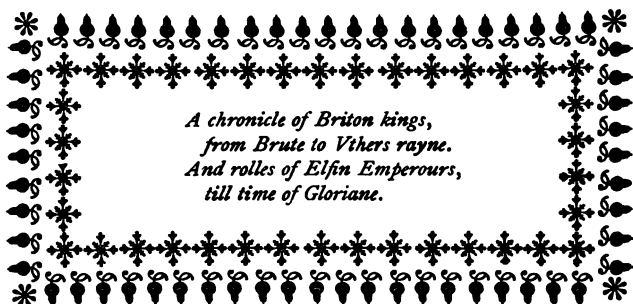
Amidst them all he in a chaire was set,
 Tossing and turning them withouten end ; 520
 But for he was vnhabable them to set,
 A litle boy did on him still attend,
 To reach, when euer he for ought did fend ;
 And oft when things were lost, or laid amis,
 That boy them sought, and vnto him did lend.
 Therefore he *Anamnestes* cleped is,
 And that old man *Eumnestes*, by their propertis.

The knights there entring, did him reuerence dew
 And wondred at his endlesse exercife,
 Then as they gan his Librarie to vew, 530
 And antique Registers for to auife,
 There chaunced to the Princes hand to rize,
 An auncient booke, hight *Briton moniments*,
 That of this lands first conquest did deuize,
 And old diuision into Regiments,
 Till it reduced was to one mans gouernments.

Sir *Guyon* chaunst eke on another booke,
 That hight *Antiquitie* of *Faerie* lond.
 In which when as he greedily did looke ;
 Th'off-spring of Elues and Faries there he fond, 540
 As it deliuered was from hond to hond :
 Whereat they burning both with feruent fire,
 Their countries auncestry to vnderstond,
 Crau'd leaue of *Alma*, and that aged fire,
 To read those bookes ; who gladly graunted their desire.

l. 519, 'sett' : l. 521, 'sett' : l. 524, 'things' : l. 528, 'knightes' : l. 538,
 'Faery' : l. 540, 'offspring' . . . *Faryes* : l. 543, 'countreys.'

Cant. / X.



W Ho now shall giue vnto me words and found,
Equall vnto this haughtie enterprife ?
Or who shal lend me wings, with which from ground
My lowly verſe may loftily ariſe,
And liſt it ſelfe vnto the higheſt ſkies ? 10
More ample ſpirit, then hitherto was wount,
Here needes me, whiles the famous aunceſtries
Of my moſt dreaded Soueraigne I recount,
By which all earthly Princes ſhe doth farre ſurmout.

Ne vnder Sunne, that ſhines ſo wide and faire,
Whence all that liues, does borrow life and light,
Liues ought, that to her lineage may compaire,
Which though from earth it be deriued right,

l. 4, 'rolls': l. 7, 'haughty': l. 8, 'frō': l. 10, 'ſkies': l. 11, 'hether-
to': l. 12, 'auncestries': l. 14, 'far,' and so l. 21.

Yet doth it selfe stretch forth to heauens hight,
 And all the world with wonder ouerspred ; 20
 A labour huge, exceeding farre my might :
 How shall fraile pen, with feare disparaged,
 Conceiue such foueraine glory, and great bountihed ?

Argument worthy of *Mæonian* quill,
 Or rather worthy of great *Phœbus* rote,
 Whereon the ruines of great *Offa* hill,
 And triumphes of *Phlegrean Ioue* he wrote, /
 That all the Gods admird his loftie note.
 But if some relish of that heavenly lay
 His learned daughters would to me report, 30
 To decke my song withall, I would assay,
 Thy name, ô foueraine Queene, to blazon farre away.

Thy name ô foueraine Queene, thy realme and race,
 From this renowned Prince deriued arre,
 Who mightily vpheld that royall mace,
 Which now thou bear'st, to thee descended farre
 From mightie kings and conquerours in warre,
 Thy fathers and great Grandfathers of old,
 Whose noble deedes aboue the Northerne starre
 Immortall fame for euer hath enrold ; 40
 As in that old mans booke they were in order told.

The land, which warlike Britons now possesse,
 And therein haue their mightie empire rayfd,

l. 19, 'heuens': l. 21, 'labor': l. 23, 'bountyhed': l. 28, 'lofty':
 l. 29, 'heuenly': l. 32, 'O . . . far,' and 'O' l. 33: l. 35, 'Whom' in
 '90 and '96, but corrected in 'Faults escaped' of former: l. 37, 'mighty,'
 and so l. 43: l. 38, 'thy great,' and 'old' misprinted 'gold' in '90, but
 corrected in 'Faults escaped': l. 39, 'deads . . . Northern.'

In antique times was saluage wilderneffe,
 Vnpeopled, vnmanurd, vnprou'd, vnprayfd,
 Ne was it Island then, ne was it payfd
 Amid the *Ocean* waues, ne was it fought
 Of marchants farre, for profits therein prayfd,
 But was all desolate, and of some thought
 By sea to haue bene frō the *Celticke* mayn-land brought.

Ne did it then deferue a name to haue, 51
 Till that the venturous Mariner that way
 Learning his ship from those white rocks to faue,
 Which all along the Southerne sea-coast lay,
 Threatning vnheedie wrecke and rash decay,
 For safeties sake that fame his sea-marke made,
 And namd it *Albion*. But later day
 Finding in it fit ports for fishers trade,
 Gan more the fame frequent, and further to inuade.

But / farre in land a saluage nation dwelt, 60
 Of hideous Giants, and halfe beastly men,
 That neuer tasted grace, nor goodnesse felt,
 But like wild beasts lurking in loathsome den,
 And flying fast as Roebucke through the fen,
 All naked without shame, or care of cold,
 By hunting and by spoiling liued then ;
 Of stature huge, and eke of courage bold,
 That sonnes of men amazed their sternnesse to behold.

But whence they sprong, or how they were begot,
 Vneath is to assure ; vneath to wene 70

l. 45, 'unproud': l. 48, 'merchaunts': l. 55, 'vnheedy': l. 56, 'safety that fame': l. 60, 'far': l. 62, 'goodnes': l. 63, 'beastes': l. 66, 'liueden' (sic): l. 67, 'corage': l. 68, 'sternesse': l. 69, 'begott': l. 70, , for ;.

That monstrous error, which doth some assot,
 That *Dioclesians* fiftie daughters shene
 Into this land by chaunce haue driuen bene,
 Where companing with feends and filthy Sprights,
 Through vaine illusion of their lust vnclene,
 They brought forth Giants and such dreadfull wights,
 As farre exceeded men in their immeasurd mights.

They held this land, and with their filthinesse
 Polluted this fame gentle soyle long time :
 That their owne mother loathd their beastlinesse, 80
 And gan abhorre her broods vnkindly crime,
 All were they borne of her owne natie slime ;
 Vntill that *Brutus* anciently deriu'd
 From royall stocke of old *Assaraos* line,
 Driuen by fatall error, here arriu'd,
 And them of their vniust possession depriu'd.

But ere he had established his throne,
 And spred his empire to the vtmost shore,
 He fought great battels with his saluage fone ;
 In which he them defeated euermore, / 90
 And many Giants left on groning flore ;
 That well can witnesse yet vnto this day
 The westerne Hogh, besprincled with the gore
 Of mightie *Goëmot*, whom in stout fray
Corineus conquered, and cruelly did slay.

And eke that ample Pit, yet farre renownd,
 For the large leape, which *Debon* did compell

l. 71, 'assot' : l. 72, 'fifty' : l. 74, no , : l. 76, 'Geannts & . . . dread-ful' : l. 77, 'far' : l. 82, 'a' in 'natieue' reversed : l. 83, 'Vntil' : l. 84, 'roiall' : l. 89, 'batteils' : l. 91, 'Giaunts,' and , for ; : l. 92, 'witnes' : l. 94, 'mighty . . . whome' : l. 96, 'Pitt . . . far.'

Coulin to make, being eight lugs of grownd ;
 Into the which returning backe, he fell :
 But those three monstros stones doe most excell
 Which that huge sonne of hideous *Albion*, 101
 Whose father *Hercules* in Fraunce did quell,
 Great *Godmer* threw, in fierce contention,
 At bold *Canutus* ; but of him was slaine anon.

In meed of these great conquests by them got,
Corineus had that Prouince vtmost west,
 To him assigned for his worthy lot,
 Which of his name and memorable gest
 He called *Cornewaile*, yet so called best :
 And *Debons* shayre was, that is *Deuonshyre* : 110
 But *Canute* had his portion from the rest,
 The which he cald *Canutium*, for his hyre ;
 Now *Cantium*, which Kent we commenly inquire.

Thus *Brute* this Realme vnto his rule subdewd,
 And raigned long in great felicitie,
 Lou'd of his friends, and of his foes eschewd,
 He left three sonnes, his famous progeny,
 Borne of faire *Inogene* of *Italy* ;
 Mongst whom he parted his imperiall state,
 And *Locrine* left chiefe Lord of *Britany*. 120
 At last ripe age bad him surrender late
 His life, and long good fortune vnto finall fate.

Locrine / was left the foueraine Lord of all ;
 But *Albanact* had all the Northrene part,

l. 99, 'returning,' and : for , of '90 and '96 : l. 105, 'gott' : l. 107,
 'lett' : l. 109, 'Cornewaile' : l. 113, 'comenly inquire' : l. 115, 'felicity':
 l. 118, 'feyre' : l. 124, 'Northerne.'

Which of himselfe *Albania* he did call ;
 And *Camber* did possesse the Westerne quart,
 Which *Seuerne* now from *Logris* doth depart :
 And each his portion peaceably enioyd,
 Ne was there outward breach, nor grudge in hart,
 That once their quiet gouernment annoyd, 130
 But each his paines to others profit still employd.

Vntill a nation straung, with visage swart,
 And courage fierce, that all men did affray,
 Which through the world the swarmd in euery part,
 And ouerflow'd all countries farre away,
 Like *Noyes* great flood, with their importune sway
 This land inuaded with like violence,
 And did themselues through all the North display :
 Vntill that *Locrine* for his Realmes defence,
 Did head against them make, and strong munificence.

He them encountred, a confused rout, 141
 Foreby the Riuer, that whylome was hight
 The auncient *Abus*, where with courage stout
 He them defeated in victorious fight,
 And chaste so fiercely after fearefull flight,
 That forst their Chieftaine, for his safeties fake,
 (Their Chieftaine *Humber* named was aright)
 Vnto the mightie streame him to betake,
 Where he an end of battell, and of life did make.

l. 131, '*paynes*' : l. 133, '*corage*' : l. 135, '*far*' : l. 140, '*munifcence*' is misprinted '*munifcence*' in '96—Dr. Morris inadvertently assigns the misprint to '90 and the correct word to '96 : l. 146, '*Chieftain*,' and so l. 147 : l. 148, '*mighty*' : l. 149, '*batteill*.'

The king returned proud of victorie, 150
 And insolent wox through vnwonted ease,
 That shortly he forgot the ieopardie,
 Which in his land he lately did appease, /
 And fell to vaine voluptuous diseafe :
 He lou'd faire Ladie *Estrild*, lewdly lou'd,
 Whose wanton pleasures him too much did please.
 That quite his hart from *Guendolene* remou'd,
 Frō *Guendolene* his wife, though alwaies faithfull prou'd.

The noble daughter of *Corineus*
 Would not endure to be so vile difdained, 160
 But gathering force, and courage valorous,
 Encountred him in battell well ordaind,
 In which him vanquisht she to fly constraind :
 But she so fast purfewd, that him she tooke,
 And threw in bands, where he till death remaind ;
 Als his faire *Leman*, flying through a brooke,
 She ouerhent, nought moued with her piteous looke.

But both her felfe, and eke her daughter deare,
 Begotten by her kingly Paramoure,
 The faire *Sabrina* almost dead with feare, 170
 She there attached, farre from all succoure ;
 The one she slew in that impatient stoure,
 But the sad virgin innocent of all,
 Adowne the rolling riuier she did poure,
 Which of her name now *Seuerne* men do call :
 Such was the end, that to disloyall loue did fall.

l. 150, 'retourned victory' : l. 152, 'ieopardy' : l. 155, 'leudly' :
 l. 158, 'faithful' : l. 161, 'corage' : l. 162, 'batteill' : l. 172, 'upon the
 present stoure.'

Then for her sonne, which she to *Locrin* bore,
Madan was young, vnmeet the rule of sway,
 In her owne hande the crowne she kept in store,
 Till ryper yeares he raught, and stronger stay : 180
 During which time her powre she did display
 Through all this realme, the glorie of her sex,
 And first taught men a woman to obay :
 But when her sonne to mans estate did wex,
 She it surrendred, ne her selfe would lenger vex.

Tho / *Madan* raignd, vnworthie of his race :
 For with all shame that sacred throne he fild :
 Next *Memprise*, as vnworthy of that place,
 In which being conforred with *Manild*,
 For thirft of single kingdome him he kild. 190
 But *Ebranck* salued both their infamies
 With noble deedes, and warreyd on *Brunchild*
 In *Henault*, where yet of his victories
 Braue moniments remaine, which yet that land enuies.

An happie man in his first dayes he was,
 And happie father of faire progeny :
 For all so many weekes as the yeare has,
 So many children he did multiply ;
 Of which were twentie sonnes, which did apply,
 Their minds to praise, and cheualrous desire : 200
 Those germans did subdew all Germany,
 Of whom it hight ; but in the end their Sire
 With foule repulse from Fraunce was forced to retire.

l. 178, 'fo' : l. 186, catchword 'The' in '96 : l. 190, 'kingdom' : l. 195, 'happy,' and so l. 196 : l. 197, , after 'weekes' : l. 200, 'minde . . . prayse . . . desyre' : l. 202, 'Syre' : l. 203, 'retyre.'

Which blot his sonne fucceeding in his feat,
 The second *Brute*, the second both in name,
 And eke in semblance of his puiffance great,
 Right well recur'd, and did away that blame
 With recompence of euerlasting fame.
 He with his victour sword first opened,
 The bowels of wide Fraunce, a forlorne Dame, 210
 And taught her first how to be conquered; (ked.
 Since which, with fundrie spoiles she hath beene ranfac-

Let *Scaldis* tell, and let tell *Hania*,
 And let the marsh of *Eftham bruges* tell,
 What colour were their waters that same day,
 And all the moore twixt *Eluerfham* and *Dell*, /
 With bloud of *Henalois*, which therein fell.
 How oft that day did fad *Brunchildis* see
 The greene shield dyde in dolorous vermell?
 That not *Scuith guiridh* it mote seeme to bee 220
 But rather y *Scuith gogh*, figne of fad crueltee.

His sonne king *Leill* by fathers labour long,
 Enioyd an heritage of lasting peace,
 And built *Cairleill*, and built *Cairleon* strong.
 Next *Huddibras* his realme did not encrease,
 But taught the land from wearie warres to cease.
 Whose footsteps *Bladud* following in arts
 Exceld at *Athens* all the learned preace,

l. 204, 'blott': l. 206, 'semblaunce . . . puiffaunce': l. 212, 'fondrie . . . bene': l. 217, 'blood': ll. 220-1 are thus printed in '90:—

'That not he mote seeme to bee.
 But'

—evidently the Poet himself meant these lacking words to have been filled in, for in 'Faults escaped' (of '90) we read '*Sewith Scuith*': l. 220, (.) removed: l. 226, 'wars': l. 227, 'artes.'

From whence he brought them to these saluage parts,
And with sweet science mollifide their stubborne harts.

Enfample of his wondrous faculty, 231

Behold the boyling Bathes at *Cairbadon*,
Which seeth with secret fire eternally,
And in their entrails, full of quicke Brimston,
Nourish the flames, which they are warm'd vpon,
That to their people wealth they forth do well,
And health to euery forreine nation :
Yet he at last contending to excell

The reach of men, through flight into fond mischief fell.

Next him king *Leyr* in happie peace long raind, 240

But had no issue male him to succeed,
But three faire daughters, which were well vptraind,
In all that seemed fit for kingly seed :
Mongst whom his realme he equally decreed
To haue diuided. Tho when feeble age
Nigh to his vtmost date he saw proceed,
He cald his daughters ; and with speeches sage
Inquyrd, which of them most did loue her parentage.

The / eldest *Gonorill* gan to protest,

That she much more then her owne life him lou'd :
And *Regan* greater loue to him profest, 251
Then all the world, when euer it were prou'd ;
But *Cordeill* said she lou'd him, as behoou'd :
Whose simple answere, wanting colours faire
To paint it forth, him to displeasance moou'd,

l. 229, 'whēce': l. 234, 'entrailles . . . quick': l. 235, 'warmd': l. 236, 'their'—in '90 and '96 misprinted 'her,' but corrected in 'Faults escaped' of the former: l. 237, 'forreyne': l. 240, 'raynd': l. 243, 'fitt': l. 254, 'fayre': l. 255, 'displeasance.'

That in his crowne he counted her no haire,
But twixt the other twaine his kingdome whole did
shaire.

So wedded th'one to *Maglan* king of Scots,
And th'other to the king of *Cambria*,
And twixt them shayrd his realme by equall lots :
But without dowre the wife *Cordelia*, 261
Was sent to *Aganip* of *Celtica*.
Their aged Syre, thus eased of his crowne,
A priuate life led in *Albania*,
With *Gonorill*, long had in great renowne, (downe.
That nought him grieu'd to bene from rule depofed

But true it is, that when the oyle is spent,
The light goes out, and weeke is throwne away ;
So when he had resign'd his regiment,
His daughter gan despise his drouping day, 270
And wearie waxe of his continuall stay.
Tho to his daughter *Rigan* he repayrd,
Who him at first well vsed euery way ;
But when of his departure she despayrd,
Her bountie she abated, and his cheare empayrd.

The wretched man gan then auife too late,
That loue is not, where most it is profest,
Too truely tryde in his extreamest state ;
At last resolu'd likewise to proue the rest, /

l. 256, 'crown . . . hayre': l. 257, 'twain . . . shayre': l. 258, 'Scottes': l. 260, 'lottes': l. 262, 'Agganipp': l. 264, 'ledd': l. 266, 'beene': l. 267, no, after 'is': l. 268, 'weeke' is 'wike' in 1609—both = *wick*—see Glossary s.v.: l. 272, 'Regan': l. 276, 'to': l. 278, 'extremeft.'

He to *Cordelia* him selfe addrest, 280
 Who with entire affection him receau'd,
 As for her Syre and king her seemed best ;
 And after all an army strong she leau'd,
 To war on those, which him had of his realme bereau'd.

So to his crowne she him restor'd againe,
 In which he dyde, made ripe for death by eld,
 And after wild, it should to her remaine :
 Who peaceably the same long time did weld :
 And all mens harts in dew obedience held :
 Till that her sisters children, woxen strong 290
 Through proud ambition, against her rebeld,
 And ouercommen kept in prison long,
 Till wearie of that wretched life, her selfe she hong.

Then gan the bloudie brethren both to raine :
 But fierce *Cundah* gan shortly to enuie
 His brother *Morgan*, prickt with proud disdaine,
 To haue a pere in part of soueraintie,
 And kindling coles of cruell enmitie,
 Raisd warre, and him in battell ouerthrew :
 Whence as he to those woodie hils did flie, 300
 Which hight of him *Glamorgan*, there him flew :
 Then did he raigne alone, when he none equall knew.

His sonne *Riuall* his dead roome did supply,
 In whose sad time blood did from heauen raine :

l. 281, 'entyre': l. 283, the 'n' in 'an' reversed: l. 285, 'restord':
 l. 293, 'weary': l. 294, 'bloody': l. 295, 'enuy': l. 297, 'soueraintie':
 l. 298, 'enmity': l. 299, 'batteill': l. 300, 'woody hilles . . . fly': l. 303,
 'Riuall . . . roume': l. 304, 'blood . . . rayne.'

Next great *Gurgustus*, then faire *Cacily*
 In constant peace their kingdomes did containe,
 After whom *Lago*, and *Kinmarke* did raine,
 And *Gorbogud*, till farre in yeares he grew :
 Till his ambitious sonnes vnto them twaine,
 Arraught the rule, and from their father drew, 310
 Stout *Ferrex* and sterne *Porrex* him in prifon threw.

But / O, the greedy thirst of royall crowne,
 That knowes no kinred, nor regards no right,
 Stird *Porrex* vp to put his brother downe ;
 Who vnto him assembling forreine might,
 Made warre on him, and fell him felse in fight :
 Whose death t'auenge, his mother mercileffe,
 Most mercileffe of women, *VVyden* hight,
 Her other sonne fast sleeping did oppresse,
 And with most cruell hand him murdred pittileffe. 320

Here ended *Brutus* sacred progenie,
 Which had feuen hundred yeares this scepter borne,
 With high renowme, and great felicitie?
 The noble braunch from th'antique stocke was torne
 Through discord, and the royall throne forlorne :
 Thenceforth this Realme was into factions rent,
 Whilest each of *Brutus* boasted to be borne,
 That in the end was left no monument
 Of *Brutus*, nor of Britons glory auncient.

Then vp arose a man of matchlesse might, 330
 And wondrous wit to menage high affaires,

l. 306, 'contayne' : l. 307, 'rayne' : l. 308, 'far' : l. 309, 'Till' is
 'Then' in '90, and 'When' in 1609: *ib.*, 'Ambitious . . . twayne' :
 l. 312, 'O' : l. 315, 'forreigne' : l. 321, 'progeny' : l. 323, 'felicity' :
 l. 325, 'roiall' : l. 329, 'glorie' : l. 331, 'affayres.'

Who stird with pittie of the stressed plight
 Of this sad Realme, cut into sundry shaires
 By such, as claymd themselues *Brutes* rightfull haire,
 Gathered the Princes of the people loose,
 To taken counsell of their common cares ;
 Who with his wisedome won, him streight did choose,
 Their king, and swore him fealty to win or loose.

Then made he head against his enimies,
 And *Ymner* flew, or *Logris* miscreate ; 340
 Then *Ruddoc* and proud *Stater*, both allies,
 This of *Albanie* newly nominate, /
 And that of *Cambry* king confirmed late,
 He ouerthrew through his owne valiaunce ;
 Whose countreis he redus'd to quiet state,
 And shortly brought to ciuill gouernaunce, (aunce.
 Now one, which earst were many, made through vari-

Then made he sacred lawes, which some men say
 Were vnto him reueald in vision,
 By which he freed the Traueilers high way, 350
 The Churches part, and Ploughmans portion,
 Restraining stealth, and strong extortion ;
 The gracious *Numa* of great *Britanie* :
 For till his dayes, the chiefe dominion
 By strength was wielded without pollicie ;
 Therefore he first wore crowne of gold for dignitie.

Donwallo dyde (for what may liue for ay ?)
 And left two sonnes, of pearelesse prowesse both ;

l. 332, 'with' for 'vp' of '96 : l. 333, 'realme . . . sondry shayres' :
 l. 334, 'thelues . . . hayres' : l. 342, 'Albany' : l. 345, 'countries' :
 l. 346, 'ciuile' : l. 353, 'Britany' : l. 355, 'pollicy' : l. 356, 'dignity.'

That sacked *Rome* too dearely did assay,
 The recompence of their periured oth, 360
 And ranfackt *Greece* well tryde, whē they were wroth ;
 Besides subiected *Fraunce*, and *Germany*,
 Which yet their prayfes speake, all be they loth,
 And inly tremble at the memory
 Of *Brennius* and *Bellinus*, kings of Britany.

Next them did *Gurgunt*, great *Bellinus* sonne
 In rule succeede, and eke in fathers prayse ;
 He Easterland subdewd, and *Danmarke* wonne,
 And of them both did foy and tribute raife,
 The which was dew in his dead fathers dayes : 370
 He also gaue to fugitiues of *Spayne*,
 Whom he at sea found wandring from their wayes,
 A seate in *Ireland* safely to remayne,
 Which they should hold of him, as subiect to *Britayne*.

After / him raigned *Guitheline* his hayre,
 The iustest man and trewest in his dayes,
 Who had to wife Dame *Mertia* the fayre,
 A woman worthy of immortall prayse,
 Which for this Realme found many goodly layes,
 And wholesome Statutes to her husband brought ;
 Her many deemd to haue beene of the *Fayes*, 381
 As was *Aegerie*, that *Numa* tought ;
 Those yet of her be *Mertiä* lawes both nam'd & thought.

Her sonnes *Sifillus* after her did rayne,
 And then *Kimarus*, and then *Danius* ;

l. 361, 'wel': l. 363, 'praises': l. 365, 'kings': l. 366, 'Gurgunt':
 l. 367, 'praise': l. 368, 'Denmarke': l. 370, 'daies': l. 372, 'waies':
 l. 376, 'daies': l. 378, 'praise': l. 384, 'Sifillus'—the way 'f' is looped
 here and elsewhere makes it look like 'f'.

Next whom *Morindus* did the crowne sustaine,
 Who, had he not with wrath outrageous,
 And cruell rancour dim'd his valorous
 And mightie deeds, should matched haue the best :
 As well in that fame field victorious 390
 Against the forreine *Morands* he exprest ;
 Yet liues his memorie, though carcas sleepe in rest.

Fiue sonne[s] he left begotten of one wife,
 All which successiuelly by turnes did raine ;
 First *Gorboman* a man of vertuous life ;
 Next *Archigald*, who for his proud disdaine,
 Deposed was from Princedome soueraine,
 And pitteous *Elidure* put in his sted ;
 Who shortly it to him restord againe,
 Till by his death he it recouered ; 400
 But *Peridure* and *Vigent* him disthronized.

In wretched prison long he did remaine,
 Till they outraigned had their vtmost date,
 And then therein refeized was againe,
 And ruled long with honorable state, /
 Till he surrendred Realme and life to fate.
 Then all the sonnes of these fiue brethren raynd
 By dew successe, and all their Nephewes late,
 Euen thrife eleuen descents the crowne retaynd,
 Till aged *Hely* by dew heritage it gaynd. 410

He had two sonnes, whose eldest called *Lud*
 Left of his life most famous memory,

l. 386, 'sustayne' : l. 389, 'decides' : l. 394, 'rayne' : l. 396, 'disdayne' :
 l. 397, 'souerayne' : l. 399, 'agayne.'

And endlesse monuments of his great good :
 The ruin'd wals he did reædifye
 Of *Troynouant*, gainst force of enemy,
 And built that gate, which of his name is hight,
 By which he lyes entombed solemnly.
 He left two sonnes, too young to rule aright,
Androgeus and *Tenantius*, pictures of his might.

Whilst they were young, *Cassibalane* their Eme 420
 Was by the people chosen in their sted,
 Who on him tooke the royall Diademe,
 And goodly well long time it gouerned,
 Till the prowde *Romanes* him disquieted,
 And warlike *Cæsar*, tempted with the name
 Of this sweet Island, neuer conquered,
 And enuyng the Britons blazed fame,
 (O hideous hunger of dominion) hither came.

Yet twise they were repulsd backe againe,
 And twise renforst, backe to their ships to fly, 430
 The whiles with bloud they all the shore did staine,
 And the gray *Ocean* into purple dy :
 Ne had they footing found at last perdie,
 Had not *Androgeus*, false to natiue foyle,
 And enuious of Vncles soueraintie,
 Betrayd his contrey vnto forreine spoyle :
 Nought else, but treason, from the first this lād did foyle.

So / by him *Cæsar* got the victory,
 Through great bloudshed, and many a sad assay,

l. 424, 'proude' : l. 431, 'blood,' and , for . of '96 : l. 436, 'countrey' :
 l. 437, 'land' : l. 439, 'bloodshed'—misprinted 'bloushed' in '96.

In which him selfe was charged heauily 440
 Of hardy *Nennius*, whom he yet did slay,
 But lost his sword, yet to be seene this day.
 Thenceforth this land was tributarie made
 T'ambitious *Rome*, and did their rule obey,
 Till *Arthur* all that reckoning did defray;
 Yet oft the Briton kings against them strongly fwayd.

Next him *Tenantius* raignd, then *Kimbeline*,
 What time th'eternall Lord in fleshly slime
 Enwombed was, from wretched *Adams* line
 To purge away the guilt of sinfull crime: 450
 O ioyous memorie of happy time,
 That heauenly grace so plenteously displayd;
 (O too high ditty for my simple rime.)
 Soone after this the *Romanes* him wrrayd;
 For that their tribute he refusd to let be payd.

Good *Claudius*, that next was Emperour,
 An army brought, and with him battell fought,
 In which the king was by a Treachetour
 Disguised slaine, ere any thereof thought:
 Yet ceased not the bloody fight for ought; 460
 For *Aruirage* his brothers place supplide,
 Both in armes, and crowne, and by that draught
 Did driue the *Romanes* to the weaker fide,
 That they to peace agreed. So all was pacifide.

Was neuer king more highly magnifide,
 Nor dred of *Romanes*, then was *Aruirage*,

l. 445, 'defrayd'—to be noted: l. 457, 'batteile': l. 460, 'bloody': l. 461, 'supplyde': l. 463, 'fyde': l. 464, 'pacifyde': l. 466, 'dredd.'

For which the Emperour to him allide
 His daughter *Genuifs* in marriage : /
 Yet shortly he renounst the vassalage
 Of *Rome* againe, who hither hastily sent 470
Vespasian, that with great spoile and rage
 Forwasted all, till *Genuiffa* gent
 Perfwaded him to ceasse, and her Lord to relent.

He dyde ; and him succeeded *Marius*,
 Who ioyd his dayes in great tranquillity,
 Then *Coyll*, and after him good *Lucius*,
 That first receiued Christianitie,
 The sacred pledge of Christes Euangely :
 Yet true it is, that long before that day
 Hither came *Ioseph* of *Arimathy*, 480
 Who brought with him the holy grayle, (they say)
 And preacht the truth, but since it greatly did decay.

This good king shortly without isswe dide,
 Whereof great trouble in the kingdome grew,
 That did her selfe in sundry parts diuide,
 And with her powre her owne selfe ouerthrew,
 Whilest *Romanes* dayly did the weake subdew :
 Which seeing stout *Bunduca*, vp arose,
 And taking armes, the *Britons* to her drew ;
 With whom she marched streight against her foes, 490
 And them vnwares besides the *Seuerne* did enclose.

There she with them a cruell battell tride,
 Not with so good successe, as she deseru'd ;

l. 469, 'vassallage' : l. 470, 'hether' : l. 473, 'lord' : l. 474, 'dyde' :
 l. 477, 'Christianity' : l. 485, 'fondry' : l. 487, 'daily' : l. 492, 'batteill
 tryde.'

By reason that the Captaines on her side,
 Corrupted by *Paulinus*, from her sweru'd :
 Yet such, as were through former flight preferu'd,
 Gathering againe, her Host she did renew,
 And with fresh courage on the victour seru'd :
 But being all defeated, saue a few,
 Rather then fly, or be captiu'd her selfe she flew. 500

O / famous moniment of womens prayfe,
 Matchable either to *Semiramis*,
 Whom antique history so high doth raise,
 Or to *Hyssiphil'* or to *Thomiris* :
 Her Host two hundred thousand numbred is ;
 Who whiles good fortune fauoured her might,
 Triumphed oft against her enimis ;
 And yet though ouercome in haplesse fight,
 She triumphed on death, in enemies despight,

Her reliques *Fulgent* hauing gathered, 510
 Fought with *Seuerus*, and him ouerthrew ;
 Yet in the chace was slaine of them, that fled :
 So made them victours, whom he did subdew.
 Then gan *Carausius* tirannize anew,
 And gainst the *Romanes* bent their proper powre,
 But him *Allectus* treacherously slew,
 And tooke on him the robe of Emperoure :
 Nath'lesse the same enjoyed but short happy howre :

For *Asclepiodate* him ouercame,
 And left inglorious on the vanquisht playne, 520

l. 494, 'fyde' : l. 496, 'preferu'd' is misprinted 'perferu'd' in '96 :
 l. 498, 'corage . . . victor' : l. 503, 'rayse' : l. 507, 'enemis' : l. 509,
 'Shee' : l. 513, 'victors.'

Without or robe, or rag, to hide his shame.
 Then afterwards he in his stead did rayne ;
 But shortly was by *Coyll* in battell slaine :
 Who after long debate, since *Lucies* time,
 Was of the *Britons* first crownd Soueraine :
 Then gan this Realme renewe her passed prime :
 He of his name *Coylchester* built of stone and lime.

Which when the *Romanes* heard, they hither sent
Constantius, a man of mickle might,
 With whom king *Coyll* made an agreement, 530
 And to him gaue for wife his daughter bright, /
 Faire *Helena*, the fairest liuing wight ;
 Who in all godly thewes, and goodly prayse
 Did far excell, but was most famous hight
 For skill in Muficke of all in her dayes,
 Aswell in curious instruments, as cunning layes.

Of whom he did great *Constantine* beget,
 Who afterward was Emperour of *Rome* ;
 To which whiles absent he his mind did fet,
Octavius here lept into his roome, 540
 And it vsurped by vnrighteous doome :
 But he his title iustifide by might,
 Slaying *Traherne*, and hauing ouercome
 The *Romane* legion in dreadfull fight :
 So settled he his kingdome, and confirmd his right.

But wanting issfew male, his daughter deare,
 He gaue in wedlocke to *Maximian*,

l. 522, 'raigne': l. 523, 'batteill': l. 524, 'tyme': l. 526, 'renew': l. 528,
 'haher': l. 532, 'Fayre': l. 533, 'prayse': l. 535, 'skil . . . daies': l. 536,
 'laies': l. 537, 'begett': l. 539, 'sett': l. 546, 'ysfew.'

And him with her made of his kingdome heyre,
 Who foone by meanes thereof the Empire wan,
 Till mured by the friends of *Gratian* ; 550
 Then gan the Hunnes and Picts inuade this land,
 During the raigne of *Maximinian* ;
 Who dying left none heire them to withstand,
 But that they ouerran all parts with easie hand.

The weary *Britons*, whose war-hable youth
 Was by *Maximian* lately led away,
 With wretched miseries, and woefull ruth,
 Were to those Pagans made an open pray,
 And dayly spectacle of sad decay: (yeares,
 Whom *Romane* warres, which now foure hundred
 And more had wasted, could no whit dismay ; 561
 Till by consent of Commons and of Peares,
 They crownd the second *Constantine* with ioyous teares,

Who / hauing oft in battell vanquished
 Those spoilefull Picts, and swarming Easterlings,
 Long time in peace his Realme established,
 Yet oft annoyd with fundry bordragings
 Of neighbour Scots, and forrein Scatterlings,
 With which the world did in those dayes abound :
 Which to outbarre, with painefull pyonings 570
 From sea to sea he heapt a mightie mound,
 Which from *Alcluid* to *Panwelt* did that border bound.

Three sonnes he dying left, all vnder age ;
 By meanes whereof, their vncke *Vortigere*

l. 550, 'friends' : l. 554, 'easy' : l. 557, 'miseries' : l. 559, 'daily' :
 l. 560, 'Whome . . . foure' : l. 563, 'secōd' : l. 564, 'batteill' : l. 565,
 'spoylefull' : l. 566, 'realme' : l. 567, 'fondry' : l. 572, 'bound' : l. 573,
 'sones.'

Vfurpt the crowne, during their pupillage ;
 Which th'Infants tutors gathering to feare,
 Them closely into *Armorick* did beare :
 For dread of whom, and for those Picts annoyés,
 He sent to *Germanie*, straunge aid to reare,
 From whence eftsoones arriued here three hoyes 580
 Of *Saxons*, whom he for his safetie imployes.

Two brethren were their Capitains, which hight
Hengist and *Horfus*, well approu'd in warre,
 And both of them men of renownmed might ;
 Who making vantage of their ciuill iarre,
 And of those forreiners, which came from farre,
 Grew great, and got large portions of land,
 That in the Realme ere long they stronger arre,
 Then they which fought at first their helping hand,
 And *Vortiger* enforst the kingdome to aband. 590

But by the helpe of *Vortimere* his sonne,
 He is againe vnto his rule restord,
 And *Hengist* seeming fad, for that was donne,
 Receiued is to grace and new accord, /
 Through his faire daughters face, & flattring word ;
 Soone after which, three hundred Lordes he slew
 Of Britifh blood, all fitting at his bord ;
 Whose dolefull moniments who list to rew,
 Th'eternall markes of treason may at *Stonheng* vew.

By this the sonnes of *Constantine*, which fled, 600
Ambriſe and *Vther* did ripe yeares attaine,

l. 581, 'safety': l. 582, 'Capitayns'—'Capitains' accepted for 'Captains'
 of '96: l. 585, 'ciuile': l. 586, 'forreymers': l. 590, 'haue forst': l. 596,
 'Lords': l. 597, 'blood': l. 599, 'markes': l. 601, 'attayne.'

And here arriuing, strongly challenged
 The crowne, which *Vortiger* did longe detainē :
 Who flying from his guilt, by them was slaine,
 And *Hengist* eke foone brought to shamefull death.
 Thenceforth *Aurelius* peaceably did rayne,
 Till that through poyson stopped was his breath ;
 So now entombed lyes at Stoneheng by the heath.

After him *Vther*, which *Pendragon* hight,
 Succeding There abruptly it did end, 610
 Without full point, or other Cefure right,
 As if the rest some wicked hand did rend,
 Or th'Authour selfe could not at least attend
 To finish it : that so vntimely breach
 The Prince him selfe halfe seemeth to offend,
 Yet secret pleasure did offence empeach,
 And wonder of antiquitie long stopt his speach.

At last quite ravisht with delight, to heare
 The royall Offspring of his native land,
 Cryde out, Deare countrey, ô how dearely deare 620
 Ought thy remembraunce, and perpetuall band
 Be to thy foster Childe, that from thy hand
 Did commun breath and nouriture receaue ?
 How brutish is it not to vnderstand,
 How much to her we owe, that all vs gaue,
 That gaue vnto vs all, what euer good we haue.

But / *Guyon* all this while his booke did read,
 Ne yet has ended : for it was a great

l. 603, 'detayne': l. 604, 'slayne,' and , for . of '96: l. 615, 'seemed':
 l. 617, 'antiquity': l. 620, 'O': l. 621, 'perpetual.'

And ample volume, that doth far exceed
 My leasure, so long leaues here to repeat : 630
 It told, how first *Prometheus* did create
 A man, of many partes from beafts deriued,
 And then stole fire from heauen, to animate
 His worke, for which he was by *Ioue* depriued
 Of life him selfe, and hart-strings of an *Ægle* riuied.

That man so made, he called *Elfe*, to weet
 Quick, the first authour of all Elfin kind :
 Who wandring through the world with wearie feet,
 Did in the gardins of *Adonis* find
 A goodly creature, whom he deemd in mind 640
 To be no earthly wight, but either Spright,
 Or Angell, th'authour of all woman kind ;
 Therefore a *Fay* he her according hight,
 Of whom all *Faeryes* spring, and fetch their lignage
 right.

Of these a mightie people shortly grew,
 And puiffaunt kings, which all the world warrayd,
 And to them selues all Nations did subdew :
 The first and eldest, which that scepter swayd,
 Was *Elfin* ; him all *India* obeyd,
 And all that now *America* men call : 650
 Next him was noble *Elfinan*, who layd
Cleopolis foundation first of all :
 But *Elfiline* enclofd it with a golden wall.

1. 632, 'parts . . . deryu'd' : 1. 633, 'heuen' : 1. 634, 'depryu'd' :
 1. 635, 'him self . . . Ægle ryu'd' : 1. 637, 'kynd,' and so 1. 642 : 1. 639,
 'fynd' : 1. 640, 'mynd' : 1. 644, 'Farye . . . & . . . ' : 1. 645, 'mighty' :
 1. 646, 'puiffant kinges' : 1. 651, 'laid.'

His sonne was *Elfinell*, who ouercame
 The wicked *Gobbelines* in bloudy field :
 But *Elfant* was of most renowmed fame,
 Who all of Chrifall did *Panthea* build : /
 Then *Elfar*, who two brethren gyants kild,
 The one of which had two heads, th'other three :
 Then *Elfinor*, who was in Magick skild ; 660
 He built by art vpon the glaffy See (bee.
 A bridge of bras, whose found heauē thunder seem'd to

He left three sonnes, the which in order raynd,
 And all their Offspring, in their dew descents,
 Euen feuen hundred Princes, which maintaynd
 With mightie deedes their fundry governments ;
 That were too long their infinite contents
 Here to record, ne much materiall :
 Yet should they be most famous moniments,
 And braue ensample, both of martiall, 670
 And ciuill rule to kings and states imperiall.

After all these *Elficleos* did rayne,
 The wife *Elficleos* in great Maieftie,
 Who mightily that scepter did sustayne,
 And with rich spoiles and famous victorie,
 Did high aduaunce the crowne of *Faery* :
 He left two sonnes, of which faire *Elferon*
 The eldest brother did vntimely dy ;
 Whose emptie place the mightie *Oberon*
 Doubly supplide, in spoufall, and dominion. 680

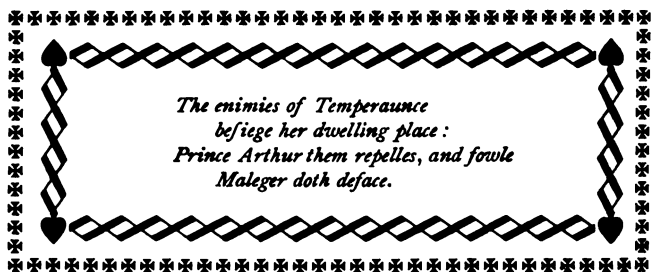
l. 655, 'bloody' : l. 658, 'gyauntes' : l. 659, 'heades' : l. 660, 'magick' :
 l. 662, 'heues' : l. 666, 'fondry' : l. 671, 'ciuill . . . kinges' : l. 675,
 'spoyles.'

Great was his power and glorie ouer all,
 Which him before, that sacred seate did fill,
 That yet remains his wide memoriall :
 He dying left the fairest *Tanaquill*,
 Him to succeede therein, by his last will :
 Fairer and nobler liueth none this howre,
 Ne like in grace, ne like in learned skill ;
 Therefore they *Glorian* call that glorious flowre :
 Long mayst thou *Glorian* liue, in glory and great powre.

Beguild / thus with delight of nouelties, 690
 And naturall desire of countreys state,
 So long they red in those antiquities,
 That how the time was fled, they quite forgate,
 Till gentle *Alma* seeing it so late,
 Perforce their studies broke, and them befought
 To thinke, how supper did them long awaite.
 So halfe vnwilling from their bookes them brought,
 And fairely feasted, as so noble knights she ought.

l. 688, : for , of '90 and '96 : l. 690, '*Beguyld*' : l. 691, '*countreyes*' :
 l. 692, '*redd*' : l. 694, '*gentle*' in '96 (misprint) : l. 698, '*fayrely*' : *ib.*,
 '*noble*' is misprinted '*nobles*' in '96 : *ib.*, '*knights*.'

Cant. XI.



What warre so cruell, or what siege so fore,
 As that, which strong affections do apply
 Against the fort of reason euermore
 To bring the foule into captiuitie :
 Their force is fiercer through infirmitie 10
 Of the fraile flesh, relenting to their rage,
 And exercise most bitter tyranny
 Vpon the parts, brought into their bondage :
 No wretchednesse is like to finfull vellenage.

But in a body, which doth freely yeeld
 His partes to reasons rule obedient,
 And letteth her that ought the scepter weeld,
 All happy peace and goodly gouernment /
 Is settled there in sure establishment ;
 There *Alma* like a virgin Queene most bright, 20
 Doth florish in all beautie excellent :

l. 4, 'Arthur': l. 6, 'cruel': l. 7, 'doe': l. 8, 'forte': l. 9, 'fowle'
 . . . captiuitie': l. 10, 'infirmitie': l. 13, 'partes.'

And to her guesstes doth bounteous banket dight,
 Attempted goodly well for health and for delight.

Early before the Morne with cremosin ray
 The windowes of bright heauen opened had,
 Through which into the world the dawning day
 Might looke, that maketh euery creature glad,
 Vprose Sir *Guyon*, in bright armour clad,
 And to his purposd iourney him prepar'd :
 With him the Palmer eke in habit sad, 30
 Him selfe addrest to that aduenture hard :
 So to the riuers fide they both together far'd.

Where them awaited ready at the ford
 The *Ferriman*, as *Alma* had behight,
 With his well rigged boate : They go aboard,
 And eftfoones gan launch his barke forthright.
 Ere long they rowed were quite out of fight,
 And fast the land behind them fled away.
 But let them pas, whiles wind and weather right
 Do serue their turnes : here I a while must stay, 40
 To see a cruell fight doen by the Prince this day.

For all so soone, as *Guyon* thence was gon
 Vpon his voyage with his trustie guide,
 That wicked band of villeins fresh begon
 That castle to affaile on euery fide,
 And lay strong siege about it far and wide.
 So huge and infinite their numbers were,
 That all the land they vnder them did hide ;

l. 23, 'for' by error dropped in '96 : l. 32, 'fyde' : l. 35, 'bote' : l. 38, 'bekynd' : l. 39, 'winde' : l. 40, 'Doe' : l. 41, 'prince' : l. 43, 'guyde' : l. 46, 'wyde' : l. 48, 'hyde.'

So fowle and vgly, that exceeding feare
 Their visages imprest, when they approached neare. 50

Them / in twelue troupes their Captain did dispart
 And round about in fittest steades did place,
 Where each might best offend his proper part,
 And his contrary obiekt most deface,
 As euery one seem'd meetest in that cace.
 Seuen of the same against the Castle gate,
 In strong entrenchments he did closely place,
 Which with incesfaunt force and endlesse hate,
 They battred day and night, and entraunce did awate.

The other fwe, fwe sundry wayes he set, 60
 Against the fwe great Bulwarkes of that pile,
 And vnto each a Bulwarke did arret,
 T'affayle with open force or hidden guile,
 In hope thereof to win victorious spoile.
 They all that charge did feruently apply,
 With greedie malice and importune toyle,
 And planted there their huge artillery,
 With which they dayly made most dreadfull battery.

The first troupe was a monstrous rablement
 Of fowle misshapen wights, of which some were 70
 Headed like Owles, with beκες vncomely bent,
 Others like Dogs, others like Gryphons dreare,
 And some had wings, and some had clawes to teare,
 And euery one of them had Lynces eyes,
 And euery one did bow and arrowes beare :

l. 51, 'Captein': l. 60, 'set': l. 61, 'pile': l. 62, 'arrett': l. 63,
 'guile.'

All those were lawlesse lustes, corrupt enuies,
And couetous aspectes, all cruell enimies.

Those fame against the bulwarke of the *Sight*
Did lay strong siege, and battailous assault,
Ne once did yield it respite day nor night, 80
But soone as *Titan* gan his head exault, /
And soone againe as he his light withhault,
Their wicked engins they against it bent :
That is each thing, by which the eyes may fault :
But two then all more huge and violent,
Beautie, and money, they that Bulwarke forely rent.

The second Bulwarke was the *Hearing* fence,
Gainst which the second troupe deffignment makes ;
Deformed creatures, in straunge difference,
Some hauing heads like Harts, some like to Snakes,
Some like wild Bores late rouzd out of the brakes ; 91
Slaunderous reproches, and fowle infamies,
Leafinges, backbytings, and vaine-glorious crakes,
Bad counfels, prayfes, and false flatteries.
All those against that fort did bend their batteries.

Likewise that same third Fort that is the *Smell*
Of that third troupe was cruelly affayd :
Whose hideous shapcs were like to feends of hell,
Some like to hounds, some like to Apes, difmayd,

l. 76, 'enuies': l. 77, 'aspectes . . . cruel enimies': l. 80, 'respite': l. 82, 'withhault'—as two words in '96: l. 84, : for , of '90 and '96: l. 86, no , after 'money,' and 'against that Bulwarke lent': l. 88, 'assignment,' and , for ; : l. 91, , for ; : l. 93, 'Leafinges, backbytings': l. 98, 'feendes': l. 99, 'hounds'—see Glossary, *s.v.*, on this word, over which surely gratuitous difficulty has been made by the commentators,

Some like to Puttockes, all in plumes arayd : 100
 All shap't according their conditions,
 For by those vgly formes weren pourtrayd,
 Foolish delights and fond abusions,
 Which do that fence besiege with light illusions.

And that fourth band, with cruell battry bent,
 Against the fourth Bulwarke, that is the *Tast*,
 Was as the rest, a gryfie rablement,
 Some mouth'd like greedy Oysteriges, some fast
 Like loathly Toades, some fashioned in the wast
 Like swine : for so deformd is luxury, 110
 Surfeat, misdiet, and vnthrifte wast,
 Vaine feasts, and idle superfluity :
 All those this fences Fort assayle incessantly.

But / the fift troupe most horrible of hew,
 And fierce of force, was dreadfull to report :
 For some like Snailes, some did like spyders shew,
 And some like vgly Vrchins thicke and short :
 Cruelly they assayled that fift Fort,
 Armed with darts of sensuall delight,
 With stings of carnall lust, and strong effort 120
 Of feeling pleasures, with which day and night
 Against that same fift bulwarke they continued fight.

Thus these twelue troupes with dreadfull puissance
 Against that Castle restlesse siege did lay,
 And euermore their hideous Ordinance
 Vpon the Bulwarkes cruelly did play,

l. 105, no, after 'band': l. 106, 'Taste': l. 107, no, after 'rest': l. 108, 'faste': l. 109, 'waste,' and so l. 111 : l. 112, 'feastes . . . ydle': l. 115, 'fierce': *ib.*, 'is': l. 117, 'thicke': l. 118, 'assayd': l. 120, 'stinges': l. 123, 'puissance': l. 125, 'Ordinaunce.'

That now it gan to threaten neare decay :
 And euermore their wicked Capitaine
 Prouoked them the breaches to assay, 129
 Somtimes with threats, somtimes with hope of gaine,
 Which by the ranfack of that peece they should attaine.

On th'other fide, the affieged Castles ward
 Their stedfast stonds did mightily maintaine,
 And many bold repulfe, and many hard
 Atchieuement wrought with perill and with paine,
 That goodly frame from ruine to sustaine :
 And thofe two brethren Giants did defend
 The walles so stoutly with their sturdie maine,
 That neuer entrance any durst pretend, 139
 But they to direfull death their groning ghosts did fend.

The noble virgin, Ladie of the place,
 Was much difmayed with that dreadfull fight :
 For neuer was she in fo euill cace,
 Till that the Prince seeing her wofull plight, /
 Gan her recomfort from fo sad affright,
 Offring his seruice, and his deareft life
 For her defence, againft that Carle to fight,
 Which was their chiefe and th'author of that strife :
 She him remerciéd as the Patrone of her life.

Eftfoones himfelfe in glitterand armes he dight, 150
 And his well proued weapons to him hent ;
 So taking courteous conge he behight,
 Thofe gates to be vnbar'd, and forth he went.

l. 127, . for : : l. 128, 'Capitayn': l. 130, 'gayn': l. 131, 'attayn':
 l. 132, 'fyde': l. 135, 'payne': l. 137, 'Gyauntes': l. 138, 'mayne':
 l. 139, 'entraunce': l. 141, 'Virgin': l. 148, 'authour.'

Faire mote he thee, the prowest and most gent,
 That euer brandished bright steele on hye :
 Whom foone as that vnruely rablement,
 With his gay Squire issuing did espy,
 They reard a most outrageous dreadfull yelling cry,

And therewith all attonce at him let fly
 Their fluttring arrowes, thicke as flakes of snow, 160
 And round about him flocke impetuously,
 Like a great water flood, that tomling low
 From the high mountaines, threats to ouerflow
 With fuddein fury all the fertile plaine,
 And the sad husbandmans long hope doth throw
 A downe the streame, and all his voves make vaine,
 Nor bounds nor banks his headlong ruine may sustaine.

Vpon his shield their heaped hayle he bore,
 And with his sword disperst the raskall flockes,
 Which fled a funder, and him fell before, 170
 As withered leaues drop from their dried stockes,
 Whê the wroth Western wind does reauue their locks;
 And vnder neath him his courageous steed,
 The fierce *Spumador* trode them downe like docks,
 The fierce *Spumador* borne of heauenly feed :
 Such as *Laomedon* of *Phæbus* race did breed.

Which / fuddeine horroure and confused cry,
 When as their Captaine heard, in haste he yode,

l. 154, 'Fayre' : l. 157, 'Squyre issewing . . . espye' : l. 164, 'playne' :
 l. 165, , after 'throw,' and no , in l. 166 after 'streame' : l. 166,
 'vayne' : l. 167, 'sustayne' : l. 170, 'sonder' : l. 171, 'dryed.' : l. 178
 'Capteine.'

The cause to weet, and fault to remedy ;
 Vpon a Tygre swift and fierce he rode, 180
 That as the winde ran vnderneath his lode,
 Whiles his long legs nigh raught vnto the ground ;
 Full large he was of limbe, and shoulders brode,
 But of such subtile substance and vnfound,
 That like a ghost he seem'd, whose graue-clothes were
 vnbound.

And in his hand a bended bow was seene,
 And many arrowes vnder his right fide,
 All deadly daungerous, all cruell keene,
 Headed with flint, and feathers bloudie dide,
 Such as the *Indians* in their quiuers hide ; 190
 Those could he well direct and streight as line,
 And bid them strike the marke, which he had eyde,
 Ne was their salue, ne was their medicine,
 That mote recure their woundes : so inly they did tine.

As pale and wan as ashes was his looke,
 His bodie leane and meagre as a rake,
 And skin all withered like a dried rooke,
 Thereto as cold and dreary as a Snake,
 That seem'd to tremble euermore, and quake :
 All in a canuas thin he was bedight, 200
 And girded with a belt of twisted brake,
 Vpon his head he wore an Helmet light,
 Made of a dead mans skull, that seem'd a ghastly fight.

Maleger was his name, and after him,
 There follow'd fast at hand two wicked Hags,

l. 179, , for ; : l. 182, *ibid.* : l. 189, 'bloody' : l. 190, , for ; : l. 199,
 no , after 'false' : *ib.*, 'their' (*bis*), in 1609 'there' : l. 196, 'body.'

With hoarie lockes all loose, and visage grim ;
 Their feet vnshod, their bodies wrapt in rags, /
 And both as swift on foot, as chased Stags ;
 And yet the one her other legge had lame,
 Which with a staffe, all full of litle snags 210
 She did disport, and *Impotence* her name :
 But th'other was *Impatience*, arm'd with raging flame.

Soon as the Carle from farre the Prince espyde,
 Glistering in armes and warlike ornament,
 His Beast he felly prickt on either syde,
 And his mischieuous bow full readie bent,
 With which at him a cruell shaft he sent :
 But he was warie, and it warded well
 Vpon his shield, that it no further went,
 But to the ground the idle quarrell fell : 220
 Then he another and another did expell.

Which to preuent, the Prince his mortall speare
 Soone to him raught, and fierce at him did ride,
 To be auenged of that shot whyleare :
 But he was not so hardie to abide
 That bitter stownd, but turning quicke aside
 His light-foot beast, fled fast away for feare :
 Whom to pursue, the Infant after hide,
 So fast as his good Courser could him beare,
 But labour lost it was, to weene approach him neare.

For as the winged wind his Tigre fled, 231
 That vew of eye could scarfe him ouertake,

l. 206, 'hoary' : l. 208, , for ; : l. 213, 'far' : l. 225, 'hardy' : l. 228,
 'pursue.'

Ne scarfe his feet on ground were seene to tred ;
 Through hils and dales he speedie way did make,
 Ne hedge ne ditch his readie passage brake,
 And in his flight the villein turn'd his face,
 (As wonts the *Tartar* by the *Caspian* lake,
 When as the *Ruffian* him in fight does chace)
 Vnto his Tygres taile, and shot at him apace.

Apace / he shot, and yet he fled apace, 240
 Still as the greedy knight nigh to him drew,
 And oftentimes he would relent his pace,
 That him his foe more fiercely should purfew ;
 Who when his vncouth manner he did vew,
 He gan auize to follow him no more,
 But keepe his standing, and his shaftes eschew,
 Vntill he quite had spent his perlous store,
 And then assaile him fresh, ere he could shift for more.

But that lame Hag, still as abroad he strew
 His wicked arrowes, gathered them againe, 250
 And to him brought, fresh battell to renew :
 Which he espying, cast her to restraine
 From yielding succour to that curfed Swaine,
 And her attaching, thought her hands to tye ;
 But soone as him dismounted on the plaine,
 That other Hag did farre away espy
 Binding her fister, she to him ran hastily.

And catching hold of him, as downe he lent,
 Him backward ouerthrew, and downe him stayd

l. 234, '*speedy*': l. 243, '*purfew*': l. 251, no , after '*brought*': *ib.*
 '*batteill*': l. 256, '*espye*': l. 259, '*backward*.'

With their rude hands and grievly graplement, 260
 Till that the villein comming to their ayd,
 Vpon him fell, and lode vpon him layd ;
 Full litle wanted, but he had him flaine,
 And of the battell balefull end had made,
 Had not his gentle Squire beheld his paine,
 And comen to his refkew, ere his bitter bane.

So greateft and moft glorious thing on ground
 May often need the helpe of weaker hand ;
 So feeble is man's ftate, and life vnfound,
 That in affurance it may neuer ftand, / 270
 Till it diffolued be from earthly band.
 Prooffe be thou Prince, the prowefteft man aliue,
 And nobleft borne of all in *Briton* land ;
 Yet thee fierce Fortune did fo nearely driue,
 That had not grace thee bleft, thou fhouldeft not furuiue.

The Squire arriuing, fiercely in his armes
 Snatcht firft the one, and then the other Iade,
 His chiefeft lets and authors of his harmes,
 And them perforce withheld with threatned blade,
 Leaft that his Lord they fhould behind inuade ; 280
 The whiles the Prince prickt with reprochfull fhame,
 As one awakt out of long flombring fhade,
 Reuiuing thought of glorie and of fame,
 Vnited all his powres to purge himfelfe from blame.

l. 260, '*handes . . . gryefly*': l. 261, '*ayd*' is misprinted '*aye*': l. 270, '*affuraunce*': l. 272, '*alyue*': l. 273, '*Briton*,' but corrected in '*Faults escaped*' by '*Britayne*': l. 275, '*suruiue*' the correction in '*Faults escaped*' of 1590, which as well as '96 prints '*reuiue*': l. 276, '*Squyre*': l. 278, '*lets*': l. 280, '*behinde*': l. 282, '*awakte*': l. 283, '*reuiuyng . . . glory*.'

Like as a fire, the which in hollow caue
 Hath long bene vnderkept, and downe suppress,
 With murmurous disdaine doth inly raue,
 And grudge, in so streight prision to be prest,
 At last breakes forth with furious vnrest,
 And striues to mount vnto his natieue seat ; 290
 All that did earst it hinder and molest,
 It now deuoures with flames and scorching heat,
 And carries into smoake with rage and horror great.

So mightily the *Briton* Prince him rouzd
 Out of his hold, and broke his caitiue bands,
 And as a Beare whom angry cures haue touzd,
 Hauing off-shakt them, and escapt their hands,
 Becomes more fell, and all that him withstands
 Treads downe and ouerthrowes. Now had the Carle
 Alighted from his Tigre, and his hands 300
 Discharged of his bow and deadly quar'le,
 To seize vpon his foe flat lying on the marle.

Which / now him turnd to disauantage deare ;
 For neither can he fly, nor other harme,
 But trust vnto his strength and manhood meare,
 Sith now he is farre from his monstrous swarme,
 And of his weapons did himselfe disarme.
 The knight yet wrothfull for his late disgrace,
 Fiercely aduaunst his valorous right arme,
 And him so fore smote with his yron mace, 310
 That groueling to the ground he fell, and fild his place.

l. 286, 'down': l. 287, 'disdayn': l. 289, 'infest' [sic]: l. 295, 'holde
 . . . caitiue': l. 299, 'down': l. 302, 'flatt': l. 306, 'far': l. 310,
 'smott.'

Well weened he, that field was then his owne,
 And all his labour brought to happie end,
 When fuddein vp the villein ouerthrowne,
 Out of his fwowne arofe, frefh to contend,
 And gan himfelfe to fecond battell bend,
 As hurt he had not bene. Thereby there lay
 An huge great ftone, which flood vpon one end,
 And had not bene remoued many a day ; 319
 Some land-marke feem'd to be, or figne of fundry way.

The fame he fnatcht, and with exceeding fway
 Threw at his foe, who was right well aware
 To fhunne the engin of his meant decay ;
 It booted not to thinke that throw to beare,
 But ground he gaue, and lightly leapt areare :
 Eft fierce returning, as a Faulcon faire
 That once hath failed of her foufe full neare,
 Remounts againe into the open aire,
 And vnto better fortune doth her felfe prepare.

So braue returning, with his brandifht blade, 330
 He to the Carle himfelfe againe addrest,
 And ftrooke at him fo sternely, that he made
 An open paffage through his riuen breft, /
 That halfe the fteele behind his back did reft ;
 Which drawing backe, he looked euermore
 When the hart blood fhould gush out of his cheft,

l. 312, 'hee': l. 313, 'labor . . . happy': l. 314, 'villeine': l. 316, 'battaill': l. 317, 'beene': l. 323, 'fhonne': l. 325, 'lept': l. 326, 'Efte . . . faulcon fayre': l. 328, 'ayre': l. 329, 'prepayre': l. 330, 'retourning': l. 331, 'him felfe agayn': l. 334, 'backe': l. 336, 'blood,' and so ll. 339 and 360.

Or his dead corse should fall vpon the flore ;
But his dead corse vpon the flore fell nathemore.

Ne drop of bloud appeared shed to bee,
All were the wounde so wide and wonderous, 340
That through his carkasse one might plainly see :
Halfe in a maze with horror hideous,
And halfe in rage, to be deluded thus,
Againe through both the sides he strooke him quight,
That made his spright to grone full piteous :
Yet nathemore forth fled his groning spright,
But freshly as at first, prepard himselfe to fight.

Thereat he smitten was with great affright,
And trembling terror did his hart apall,
Ne wist he, what to thinke of that same fight, 350
Ne what to say, ne what to doe at all ;
He doubted, leaft it were some magickall
Illusion, that did beguile his sense,
Or wandring ghost, that wanted funerall,
Or aerie spirit vnder false pretence,
Or hellish feend rayfd vp through diuelish science.

His wonder farre exceeded reafons reach,
That he began to doubt his dazeled fight,
And oft of error did himselfe appeach :
Flesh without bloud, a person without spright, 360
Wounds without hurt, a bodie without might,
That could doe harme, yet could not harmed bee,
That could not die, yet seem'd a mortall wight,

l. 340, 'wound': l. 341, 'carcas . . . playnly': l. 344, 'Again':
l. 355, 'aery sprite': l. 357, 'far': l. 361, 'body': l. 363, 'seemd.'

That was most strong in most infirmitee ;
Like did he neuer heare, like did he neuer see.

A while / he stood in this astonishment,
Yet would he not for all his great difmay
Giue ouer to effect his first intent,
And th'vtmost meanes of victorie affay,
Or th'vtmost iffew of his owne decay. 370
His owne good sword *Mordure*, that neuer fayld
At need, till now, he lightly threw away,
And his bright shield, that nought him now auayld,
And with his naked hands him forcibly affayld.

Twixt his two mightie armes him vp he fnatcht,
And crufht his carkasse so against his brest,
That the difdainfull soule he thence difpatcht,
And th'idle breath all vtterly exprest :
Tho when he felt him dead, a downe he keft
The lumpifh corse vnto the fenfeleffe grownd ; 380
Adowne he keft it with fo puiffant wrest,
That backe againe it did aloft rebownd,
And gaue against his mother earth a gronefull fownd.

As when *Ioues* harnesse-bearing Bird from hie
Stoupes at a flying heron with proud difdaine,
The stone-dead quarrey fals so forcible,
That it rebounds against the lowly plaine,
A second fall redoubling backe againe.
Then thought the Prince all perill fure was past,
And that he victor onely did remaine ; 390

l. 369, 'victory': l. 370, 'yffew': l. 376, 'carcas': l. 377, 'fowle':
l. 378, 'ydle': l. 380, 'fenceleffe': l. 384, 'hye': l. 385, 'disdayne':
l. 386, 'falls . . . forcibyle': l. 387, 'yt rebounds . . . playne': l. 388,
'agayne': l. 389, 'peril': l. 390, 'remayne.'

No sooner thought, then that the Carle as fast
 Gan heap huge strokes on him, as ere he downe was
 cast.

Nigh his wits end then woxe th'amazed knight,
 And thought his labour loft and trauell vaine,
 Against this lifelesse shadow so to fight :
 Yet life he saw, and felt his mightie maine, /
 That whiles he marueild still, did still him paine :
 For thy he gan some other wayes aduize,
 How to take life from that dead-liuing swaine,
 Whom still he marked freshly to arize 400
 From th'earth, & from her wombe new spirits to reprice.

He then remembred well, that had bene sayd,
 How th'Earth his mother was, and first him bore ;
 She eke so often, as his life decayd,
 Did life with vsury to him restore,
 And rayfd him vp much stronger then before,
 So soone as he vnto her wombe did fall ;
 Therefore to ground he would him cast no more,
 Ne him commit to graue terrestriall,
 But beare him farre from hope of succour vsuall. 410

Tho vp he caught him twixt his puissant hands,
 And hauing scruzd out of his carrion corse
 The lothfull life, now loofd from finfull bands,
 Vpon his shoulders carried him perforce

l. 392, 'down' : l. 394, 'labor . . . wayne' : l. 395, 'his,' but corrected
 in 'Faults escaped' : l. 396, 'mighty mayne' : l. 397, 'payne' : l. 399,
 'fwayne' : l. 401, 'womb' : l. 404, 'shee' : l. 406, 'reyfd' : l. 408,
 'ground' : l. 409, 'committ.'

Aboue three furlongs, taking his full course,
 Vntill he came vnto a standing lake ;
 Him thereinto he threw without remorse,
 Ne stird, till hope of life did him forsake ; (make.
 So end of that Carles dayes, and his owne paines did

Which when those wicked Hags from farre did spy,
 Like two mad dogs they ran about the lands, 421
 And th'one of them with dreadfull yelling cry,
 Throwing away her broken chaines and bands,
 And hauing quencht her burning fier brands,
 Hedlong her selfe did cast into that lake ;
 But *Impotence* with her owne wilfull hands,
 One of *Malegers* curfed darts did take,
 So riu'd her trembling hart, and wicked end did make.

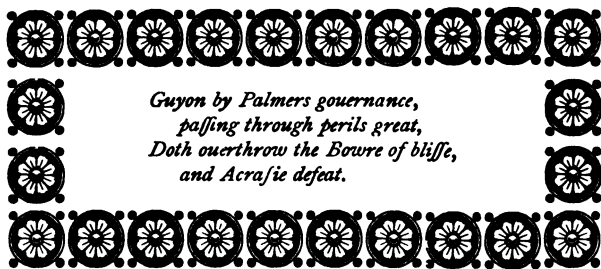
Thus / now alone he conquerour remaines ;
 Tho comming to his Squire, that kept his steed, 430
 Thought to haue mounted, but his feeble vaines
 Him faild thereto, and serued not his need, (bleed,
 Through losse of bloud, which from his wounds did
 That he began to faint, and life decay ;
 But his good Squire him helping vp with speed,
 With stedfast hand vpon his horse did stay,
 And led him to the Castle by the beaten way.

Where many Groomes and Squiers readie were,
 To take him from his steed full tenderly,
 And eke the fairest *Alma* met him there 440
 With balme and wine and costely spicery,

l. 419, 'paynes' : l. 420, 'far . . . spye' : l. 422, 'crye' : l. 428, 'ryu'd' :
 l. 430, 'cumming . . . Squyre' : l. 433, 'blood' : l. 435, 'Squyre' : l. 438,
 'Squyres ready' : l. 440, 'fayrest.'

To comfort him in his infirmity ;
 Eftfoones ſhe cauſd him vp to be conuayd,
 And of his armes deſpoyled eaſily,
 In ſumptuous bed ſhe made him to be layd,
 And all the while his wounds were dreſſing, by him
 ſtayd./

Cant. XII.



Now gins this goodly frame of Temperance
 Fairely to riſe, and her adorned hed
 To pricke of higheſt praiſe forth to aduance,
 Formerly grounded, and faſt ſetteled
 On firme foundation of true bountihed ; 10
 And this braue knight, that for this vertue fights,
 Now comes to point of that ſame perilous ſted,

l. 443, 'ſhee,' and ſo l. 445 : l. 446, 'al . . . wounds.'

l. 2, 'through . . . gouernaunce' : l. 3, 'through paſſing perilles' : l. 4, 'bliſ' : l. 5, 'Acraſy' : l. 6, 'ginnes . . . Temperaunce' : l. 7, 'Fayrely' : l. 8, 'prayſe . . . aduauance' : l. 9, 'Formerly'—qy. miſprint for 'Firmly' ? l. 10, 'bountyhed' : l. 11, 'fightes.'

Where Pleasure dwelles in fensuall delights,
Mōgst thousand dangers, & ten thousand magick mights.

Two dayes now in that sea he sayled has,
Ne euer land beheld, ne liuing wight,
Ne ought faue perill, still as he did pas :
Tho when appeared the third *Morrow* bright,
Vpon the waues to spred her trembling light,
An hideous roaring farre away they heard, 20
That all their senses filled with affright,
And streight they saw the raging furies reard
Vp to the skyes, that them of drowning made affeard.

Said then the Boteman, Palmer stere aright,
And keepe an euen course ; for yonder way
We needes must passe (God do vs well acquight)
That is the *Gulfe of Greedinesse*, they say,
That / deepe engorgeth all this worldes pray :
Which hauing swallowd vp excessiuey,
He soone in vomit vp againe doth lay, 30
And belcheth forth his superfluity,
That all the seas for feare do seeme away to fly.

On th'other fide an hideous Rocke is pight,
Of mightie *Magnes* stone, whose craggie clift
Depending from on high, dreadfull to fight,
Ouer the waues his rugged armes doth lift,
And threatneth downe to throwe his ragged rift
On who so commeth nigh ; yet nigh it drawes
All passengers, that none from it can shift :

l. 14, 'Mongst . . . dāgers . . . thousād Magick': l. 20, 'far': l. 21, 'fences': l. 26, 'pas . . . doe': l. 32, 'did,' but corrected in 'Faults escaped': l. 33, 'fyde': l. 37, , after 'rift.'

For whiles they fly that Gulfes deuouring iawes, 40
They on this rock are rent, and sunck in helpelesse wawes.

Forward they passe, and strongly he them rowes,
Vntill they nigh vnto that Gulfe arriue,
Where streame more violent and greedy growes :
Then he with all his puissance doth striue
To strike his oares, and mightily doth driue
The hollow vessell through the threatfull waue,
Which gaping wide, to swallow them alieue,
In th'huge abyffe of his engulging graue, 49
Doth rore at them in vaine, and with great terror raue.

They passing by, that griesly mouth did see,
Sucking the seas into his entralles deepe,
That seem'd more horrible then hell to bee,
Or that darke dreadfull hole of *Tartare* steepe,
Through which the damned ghosts doen often creepe
Backe to the world, bad liuers to torment :
But nought that falles into this direfull deepe,
Ne that approacheth nigh the wide descent,
May backe returne, but is condemned to be drent. /

On th'other fide, they saw that perilous Rocke, 60
Threatning it selfe on them to ruinate,
On whose sharpe clifts the ribs of vessels broke,
And shiuered ships, which had bene wrecked late,
Yet stuck, with carkasses exanimate
Of such, as hauing all their substance spent

l. 41, 'Rock': l. 43, 'arryue': l. 45, 'puissance . . . stryue': l. 46, 'dryue': l. 48, 'alyue': l. 50, 'terroure': l. 53, 'seemd': l. 55, 'creep': l. 58, 'wyde': l. 59, 'retourne': l. 62, 'sharp cliftes': l. 63, 'beene': l. 64, 'carcasses.'

In wanton ioyes, and lustes intemperate,
 Did afterwards make shipwracke violent,
 Both of their life, and fame for euer fowly blent.

For thy, this hight *The Rocke of vile Reproch*,
 A daungerous and detestable place, 70
 To which nor fish nor fowle did once approach,
 But yelling Meawes, with Seagulles hoarse and bace,
 And Cormoyrants, with birds of rauenous race,
 Which still fate waiting on that wastfull clift,
 For spoyle of wretches, whose vnhappy cace,
 After lost credite and consumed thrift,
 At last them driuen hath to this despairefull drift.

The Palmer seeing them in safetie past,
 Thus said ; behold th'enfamples in our fights,
 Of lustfull luxurie and thriftlesse wast : 80
 What now is left of miserable wights,
 Which spent their loofer daies in lewd delights,
 But shame and sad reproch, here to be red,
 By these rent reliques, speaking their ill plights ?
 Let all that liue, hereby be counfelled,
 To shunne *Rocke of Reproch*, and it as death to dred.

So forth they rowed, and that *Ferryman*
 With his stiffe oares did brush the sea so strong,
 That the hoare waters from his frigot ran,
 And the light bubbles daunced all along, 90

l. 67, 'afterwardes . . . shipwrack': l. 69, no , after 'thy' . . . 'Rock':
 l. 72, 'hoars': l. 73, 'Cormoyraunts': l. 74, 'waiting,' but corrected 'way-
 ting' in 'Faults escaped': l. 75, 'spoile . . . unhappy': l. 76, 'credit':
 l. 79, 'saide . . . fightes': l. 81, 'wightes': l. 82, 'delightes': l. 84, 'plights':
 l. 86, 'dread': l. 90, 'bubbles.'

Whiles / the salt brine out of the billowes sprong.
 At laft farre off they many Iflands spy,
 On euery fide floting the floods emong :
 Then faid the knight, Loe I the land defcry,
 Therefore old Syre thy courfe do thereunto apply.

That may not be, faid then the *Ferryman*
 Leaft we vnweeting hap to be fordonne :
 For thofe fame Iflands, feeming now and than,
 Are not firme lande, nor any certein wonne,
 But ftragglng plots, which to and fro do ronne 100
 In the wide waters : therefore are they hight
 The *wandring Iflands*. Therefore doe them fhonne ;
 For they haue oft drawne many a wandring wight
 Into moft deadly daunger and diftrefsed plight.

Yet well they feeme to him, that farre doth vew,
 Both faire and fruitfull, and the ground difpred
 With graffie greene of delectable hew,
 And the tall trees with leaues apparelled,
 Are deckt with bloffomes dyde in white and red,
 That mote the paffengers thereto allure ; 110
 But whosoeuer once hath faftened
 His foot thereon, may neuer it recure,
 But wandreth euer more vncertain and vnfire.

As th'Ifle of *Delos* whylome men report
 Amid th'*Aegæan* fea long time did ftray,
 Ne made for fhipping any certaine port,
 Till that *Latona* traueiling that way,

l. 92, 'far . . . Iflandes': l. 93, 'floodes': l. 94, 'Lo': l. 95, 'doe':
 l. 96, 'bee': l. 97, 'wee': l. 100, 'ftragtng . . . doe': l. 103, 'ofte':
 l. 106, 'grownd': l. 107, 'graffy': l. 108, 'appareled.'

Flying from *Iuno*s wrath and hard assay,
 Of her faire twins was there deliuered,
 Which afterwards did rule the night and day ; 120
 Thenceforth it firmly was established,
 And for *Apollo*s honor highly herried./

They to him hearken, as befeemeth meete,
 And passe on forward : so their way does ly,
 That one of those same Islands, which doe fleet
 In the wide sea, they needes must passen by,
 Which seemd so sweet and pleasant to the eye,
 That it would tempt a man to touchen there :
 Vpon the banck they sitting did espy
 A daintie damzell, dressing of her heare, 130
 By whom a litle skippet floting did appeare.

She them espying, loud to them can call,
 Bidding them nigher draw vnto the shore ;
 For she had cause to busie them withall ;
 And therewith loudly laught : But nathemore
 Would they once turne, but kept on as afore :
 Which when she saw she left her lockes vndight,
 And running to her boat withouten ore,
 From the departing land it launched light,
 And after them did driue with all her power and might.

Whom ouertaking, she in merry fort 141
 Then gan to bord, and purpose diuerfly,
 Now faining dalliance and wanton sport,
 Now throwing forth lewd words immodestly ;

l. 119, '*fayre*' : l. 127, '*plea/sunt*' : l. 135, '*loudly*' : l. 143, '*dalli-
 aunce*' : l. 144, '*wordes*.'

Till that the Palmer gan full bitterly
 Her to rebuke, for being loose and light :
 Which not abiding, but more scornfully
 Scoffing at him, that did her iustly wite,
 She turnd her bote about, and from them rowed quite.

That was the wanton *Phædria*, which late 150
 Did ferry him ouer the *Idle lake* :
 Whom nought regarding, they kept on their gate,
 And all her vaine allurements did forsake,
 When / them the wary Boateman thus bespake ;
 Here now behoueth vs well to auyfe,
 And of our safetie good heede to take ;
 For here before a perlous passage lyes,
 Where many Mermayds haunt, making false melodies.

But by the way, there is a great Quickfand,
 And a whirlepoole of hidden ieopardy, 160
 Therefore, Sir Palmer, keepe an euen hand ;
 For twixt them both the narrow way doth ly.
 Scarfe had he said, when hard at hand they spy
 That quickfand nigh with water couered ;
 But by the checked waue they did descry
 It plaine, and by the sea discoloured :
 It called was the quickfand of *Vnthriftighed*.

They passing by, a goodly Ship did see,
 Laden from far with precious merchandize,
 And brauely furnished, as ship might bee 170
 Which through great disauenture, or mesprize,
 Her selfe had runne into that hazardize ;

l. 147, 'scornfully' : l. 154, 'Boteman' : l. 156, 'safety' : l. 163, 'saide' :
 l. 172, 'ronne.'

Whose mariners and merchants with much toyle,
Labour'd in vaine, to haue recur'd their prize,
And the rich wares to faue from pitteous spoyle,
But neither toyle nor trauell might her backe recoyle.

On th'other side they see that perilous Poole,
That called was the *Whirlepoole of decay*,
In which full many had with haplesse doole
Beene funcke, of whom no memorie did stay : 180
Whose circled waters rapt with whirling fway,
Like to a restlesse wheele, still running round,
Did couet, as they passed by that way,
To draw the boate within the vtmost bound
Of his wide *Labyrinth*, and then to haue them dround. /

But th'heedfull Boateman strongly forth did stretch
His brawnie armes, and all his body straine,
That th'vtmost sandy breach they shortly fetch,
Whiles the dred daunger does behind remaine.
Suddeine they see from midst of all the Maine, 190
The furing waters like a mountaine rise,
And the great sea puft vp with proud disdaine,
To swell aboue the measure of his guise,
As threatning to deuoure all, that his powre despise.

The waues come rolling, and the billowes rore
Outragiously, as they enraged were,
Or wrathfull *Neptune* did them driue before
His whirling charet, for exceeding feare :
For not one puffle of wind there did appeare,

l. 176, 'trauell' : l. 182, 'rouning' : l. 184, 'bote' : l. 186, 'earnest
Boteman' : l. 187, 'bodie' : l. 188, 'sandy breach' [sic]—qy. misprint for
'beach'? l. 189, 'dredd' : l. 199, 'winde.'

That all the three thereat woxe much afayd, 200
 Vnweeting, what fuch horroure ftraunge did reare.
 Eftfoones they faw an hideous hoaft arrayd,
 Of huge Sea monfters, fuch as liuing fence difmayd.

Moſt vgly ſhapes, and horrible aſpects,
 Such as Dame Nature ſelfe mote feare to fee,
 Or ſhame, that euer ſhould ſo fowle defects
 From her moſt cunning hand eſcaped bee ;
 All dreadfull pourtraicts of deformitee :
 Spring-headed *Hydraes*, and ſea-ſhouldring Whales,
 Great whirlpooles, which all fiſhes make to flee, 210
 Bright *Scolopendraes*, arm'd with ſiluer ſcales,
 Mighty *Monoceros*, with immeaſured tayles.

The dreadfull Fiſh, that hath deferu'd the name
 Of Death, and like him lookes in dreadfull hew,
 The grieſly Waſſerman, that makes his game
 The flying ſhips with ſwiftheſſe to purſew,
 The / horrible Sea-fatyre, that doth ſhew
 His fearefull face in time of greateſt ſtorme,
 Huge *Ziffus*, whom Mariners eſchew
 No leſſe, then rockes, (as trauellers informe,) 220
 And greedy *Rofmarines* with viſages deforme.

All theſe, and thouſand thouſands many more,
 And more deformed Monſters thouſand fold,
 With dreadfull noiſe, and hollow rombling rore,
 Came ruſhing in the fomy waues enrold,
 Which ſeem'd to fly for feare, them to behold :
 Ne wonder, if theſe did the knight appall ;
 For all that here on earth we dreadfull hold,

Be but as bugs to fearen babes withall,
 Compared to the creatures in the seas entrall. 230

Feare nought, (then said the Palmer well auiz'd ;)
 For these same Monsters are not thes in deed,
 But are into these searefull shapes disguiz'd
 By that same wicked witch, to worke vs dreed,
 And draw from on this iourney to proceede.
 Tho lifting vp his vertuous staffe on hye,
 He smote the sea, which calmed was with speed,
 And all that dreadfull Armie fast gan flye
 Into great *Tethys* bosome, where they hidden lye.

Quit from that daunger, forth their course they kept, 240
 And as they went, they heard a ruefull cry
 Of one, that wayld and pittifull[y] wept,
 That through the sea the resounding plaints did fly :
 At last they in an Island did espy
 A seemely Maiden, sitting by the shore,
 That with great sorrow and sad agony,
 Seemed some great misfortune to deplore,
 And lowd to them for succour called euermore./

Which *Guyon* hearing, freight his Palmer bad,
 To stere the boate towards that dolefull Mayd, 250
 That he might know, and ease her sorrow sad :
 Who him auizing better, to him sayd ;
 Faire Sir, be not displeafd, if disfobayd :
 For ill it were to hearken to her cry ;
 For she is inly nothing ill apayd,

l. 231, '*saide*' : l. 235, '*proceed*' : l. 243, '*sea resounding*' 1609 : l. 250,
 '*bote*' : l. 253. no , after '*displeafd*.'

But onely womanish fine forgery,
Your stubborne hart t'affect with fraile infirmity.

To which when she your courage hath inclind
Through foolish pittie, then her guilefull bayt
She will embosome deeper in your mind, 260
And for your ruine at the last awayt.
The knight was ruled, and the Boateman strayt
Held on his course with stayed stedfastnesse,
Ne euer shruncke, ne euer sought to bayt
His tyred armes for toylefome wearinesse,
But with his oares did sweepe the watry wildernesse.

And now they nigh approched to the sted,
Where as those Mermayds dwelt : it was a still
And calmy bay, on th'one side sheltered
With the brode shadow of an hoarie hill, 270
On th'other side an high rocke toured still,
That twixt them both a pleasaunt port they made,
And did like an halfe Theatre fulfill :
There those fiue sisters had continuall trade,
And vfd to bath themselues in that deceitfull shade.

They were faire Ladies, till they fondly striu'd
With th'*Heliconian* maides for maistry ;
Of whom they ouer-comen, were depriu'd
Of their proud beautie, and th'one moyity
Transform'd / to fish, for their bold furquedry, 280
But th'vpper halfe their hew retained still,
And their sweet skill in wonted melody ;

l. 262, '*Knight . . . Boteman*': l. 264, '*shruncke*': l. 272, '*pleasaunt*'
—misprinted '*peasaunt*': l. 277, '*maystery*': l. 281, '*retayned*'.

Which euer after they abusd to ill,
T'allure weake trauellers, whom gotten they did kill.

So now to *Guyon*, as he passed by,
Their pleasaunt tunes they sweetly thus applide ;
O thou faire sonne of gentle Faery,
Thou art in mighty armes most magnifide
Aboue all knights, that euer battell tride,
O turne thy rudder hither-ward a while : 290
Here may thy storme-bet vessell safely ride ;
This is the Port of rest from troublous toyle,
The worlds sweet In, from paine & wearisome turmoyle.

With that the rolling sea resounding soft,
In his big base them fitly answered,
And on the rocke the waues breaking aloft,
A solemne Meane vnto them measured,
The whiles sweet *Zephirus* lowd whistled
His treble, a straunge kinde of harmony ;
Which *Guyons* senses softly ticked, 300
That he the boateman bad row easily,
And let him heare some part of their rare melody.

But him the Palmer from that vanity,
With temperate aduice discourfelled,
That they it past, and shortly gan descry
The land, to which their course they leueled ;
When suddainly a grosse fog ouer spred
With his dull vapour all that desert has,
And heauens chearefull face enuveloped,

l. 286, 'applyde': l. 287, 'fayre': l. 288, 'mightie . . . magnifyde':
l. 289, 'battell tryde': l. 290, 'hetherward': l. 291, 'bett . . . ryde':
l. 293, 'worldes . . . frō': l. 301, 'boteman.'

That all things one, and one as nothing was, 310
And this great Vniuerse seemd one confused mas. /

Thereat they greatly were difmayd, ne wift
How to direct their way in darkenesse wide,
But feard to wander in that waftfull mist,
For tomling into mischiefe vnespide.
Worfe is the daunger hidden, then descride.
Suddeinly an innumerable flight
Of harmefull fowles about them fluttering, cride,
And with their wicked wings them oft did smight,
And fore annoyed, groping in that grieſly night. 320

Euen all the nation of vnfortunate
And fatall birds about them flocked were,
Such as by nature men abhorre and hate,
The ill-faſte Owle, deaths dreadfull meſſengere,
The hoars Night-rauen, trump of dolefull dreere,
The lether-winged Bat, dayes enemy,
The ruefull Strich, ſtill waiting on the bere,
The Whiſtler ſhrill, that who ſo heares, doth dy,
The helliſh Harpies, prophets of ſad deſtiny.

All thoſe, and all that elſe does horreur breed, 330
About them flew, and fild their ſayles with feare :
Yet ſtayd they not, but forward did proceed,
Whiles th'one did row, and th'other ſtiſly ſteare ;
Till that at laſt the weather gan to cleare,
And the faire land it ſelfe did plainly ſhow.
Said then the Palmer, Lo where does appeare

L. 313, 'darkenes': L. 314, 'waſtefull': L. 319, 'ofte': L. 329, 'Harpies':
L. 330, 'ds . . . horror': L. 335, 'ſheeu.'

The sacred foile, where all our perils grow ;
Therefore, Sir knight, your ready armes about you throw.

He hearkned, and his armes about him tooke,
The whiles the nimble boate so well her sped, 340
That with her crooked keele the land she strooke,
Then forth the noble *Guyon* fallied,
And / his sage Palmer, that him gouerned ;
But th'other by his boate behind did stay.
They marched fairly forth, of nought ydred,
Both firmly armd for euery hard affay,
With constancy and care, gainst daunger and difmay.

Ere long they heard an hideous bellowing
Of many beafts, that roard outrageously,
As if that hungers point, or *Venus* sting 350
Had them enraged with fell surquedry ;
Yet nought they feard, but past on hardily,
Vntill they came in vew of those wild beafts :
Who all attonce, gaping full greedily,
And rearing fiercely their vpftarting crefts,
Ran towards, to deuoure those vnexpected guests.

But soone as they approcht with deadly threat,
The Palmer ouer them his staffe vpheld,
His mighty staffe, that could all charmes defeat :
Eftfoones their stubborne courages were queld, 360
And high aduaunced crefts downe meekely feld,
In stead of fraying, they them selues did feare,
And trembled, as them passing they beheld :

l. 337, '*perills*': l. 338, '*Therefore . . . arms*': l. 340, '*bote*,' and so
l. 344 : l. 346, '*fairly*': l. 350, '*poynt*': l. 353, '*wilde*': l. 355, '*fercely*
. . . *vpflaring*': l. 360, '*corages*.'

Such wondrous powre did in that staffe appeare,
All monsters to subdew to him, that did it beare.

Of that same wood it fram'd was cunningly,
Of which *Caduceus* whilome was made,
Caduceus the rod of *Mercury*,
With which he wons the *Stygian* realmes inuade,
Through ghastly horror, and eternall shade ; 370
Th'infernall feends with it he can asswage,
And *Orcus* tame, whom nothing can perfwade,
And rule the *Furies*, when they most do rage :
Such vertue in his staffe had eke this Palmer sage. /

Thence passing forth, they shortly do arriue,
Whereas the Bowre of *Blisse* was situate ;
A place pickt out by choice of best aliue,
That natures worke by art can imitate :
In which what euer in this worldly state
Is sweet, and pleasing vnto liuing sense, 380
Or that may dayntiest fantasie aggrate,
Was poured forth with plentifull dispence,
And made there to abound with lauish affluence.

Goodly it was enclosed round about,
Aswell their entred guestes to keepe within,
As those vnruely beafts to hold without ;
Yet was the fence thereof but weake and thin ;
Nought feard their force, that fortilage to win,
But wisedomes powre, and temperaunces might,
By which the mightiest things efforced bin : 390

l. 370, 'horror': l. 372, 'persuade': l. 373, 'doe': l. 375, 'arryue':
l. 377, 'choyce . . . alyue': l. 380, 'sweete': l. 381, 'dayntiest fantasy':
l. 390, 'mightest' (sic).

And eke the gate was wrought of substaunce light,
Rather for pleasure, then for battery or fight.

Yt framed was of precious yuory,
That seemd a worke of admirable wit ;
And therein all the famous history
Of *Iason* and *Medæa* was ywrit ;
Her mighty charmes, her furious louing fit,
His goodly conquest of the golden fleece,
His falsed faith, and loue too lightly flit,
The wondred *Argo*, which in venturous peece 400
First through the *Euxine* seas bore all the flour of *Greece*.

Ye might haue seene the frothy billowes fry
Vnder the ship, as thorough them she went,
That seemd the waues were into yuory,
Or yuory into the waues were sent ;
And / other where the snowy substaunce sprent
With vermell, like the boyes bloud therein shed,
A piteous spectacle did represent,
And otherwhiles with gold besprinkeled ;
Yt seemd th'enchanted flame, which did *Creüsa* wed.

All this, and more might in that goodly gate 411
Be red ; that euer open stood to all,
Which thither came : but in the Porch there fate
A comely personage of stature tall,
And semblaunce pleasing, more then naturall,
That trauellers to him seemd to entize ;
His looser garment to the ground did fall,

l. 394, '*witt*,' and all the rhyme-words in the stanza two t's : l. 399, '*jayth* :

l. 416, '*traueilers*.'

And flew about his heeles in wanton wize,
Not fit for speedy pace, or manly exercize.

They in that place him *Genius* did call : 420

Not that celestiall powre, to whom the care
Of life, and generation of all

That liues, pertaines in charge particulare,
Who wondrous things concerning our welfare,
And straunge phantomes doth let vs oft forsee,
And oft of secret ills bids vs beware :

That is our Selfe, whom though we do not see,
Yet each doth in him selfe it well perceiue to see.

Therefore a God him fage Antiquity

Did wisely make, and good *Agdistes* call : 430

But this fame was to that quite contrary,

The foe of life, that good enuyes to all,

That secretly doth vs procure to fall,

Through guilefull semblaunts, which he makes vs see.

He of this Gardin had the gouernall,

And Pleasures porter was deuizd to be,

Holding a staffe in hand for more formalitee. /

With diuerse flowres he daintily was deckt,

And strowed round about, and by his side

A mighty Mazer bowle of wine was set, 440

As if it had to him bene sacrificide ;

Wherewith all new-come guests he gratifide :

So did he eke Sir *Guyon* passing by :

But he his idle curtesie defide,

l. 419, 'fitt': l. 423, 'pertaines': l. 426, 'ofte': l. 427, 'doe': l. 434,
'semblants': l. 439, 'rownd': l. 440, 'fett': l. 442, 'gratyfide': l. 444,
'ydle.'

And ouerthrew his bowle disdainfully ;
And broke his staffe, with which he charmed semblants fly.

Thus being entred, they behold around
A large and spacious plaine, on euery side
Strowed with pleasauns, whose faire grassy ground
Mantled with greene, and goodly beautifide 450
With all the ornaments of *Floraes* pride,
Wherewith her mother Art, as halfe in scorne
Of niggard Nature, like a pompous bride
Did decke her, and too lauishly adorne, (morne.
When forth from virgin bowre she comes in th'early

Thereto the Heauens alwayes Iouiall,
Lookt on them louely, still in stedfast state,
Ne suffred storme nor frost on them to fall,
Their tender buds or leaues to violate,
Nor scorching heat, nor cold intemperate 460
T'afflict the creatures, which therein did dwell,
But the milde air with season moderate
Gently attempted, and disposed so well,
That still it breathed forth sweet spirit & holefome
smell.

More sweet and holefome, then the pleasaunt hill
Of *Rhodope*, on which the Nimphe, that bore
A gyaunt babe, her selfe for grieve did kill ;
Or the Theffalian *Tempe*, where of yore
Faire / *Daphne Phæbus* hart with loue did gore ;

l. 447, 'around' : l. 449, 'jayre . . . ground' : l. 450, 'greene'—misprinted 'grenee' in '96 : l. 456, 'Therewith' : l. 457, 'Lookte' : l. 461, 'creatures' misprinted 'crearures' in '96 : l. 462, 'ayre' : l. 464, 'holefom.'

Or *Ida*, where the Gods lou'd to repaire, 470
 When euer they their heauenly bowres forlore ;
 Or sweet *Parnasse*, the haunt of Muses faire ;
 Or *Eden*, if ought with *Eden* mote compaire.

Much wondred *Guyon* at the faire aspect
 Of that sweet place, yet suffred no delight
 To sincke into his fence, nor mind affect,
 But passed forth, and lookt still forward right,
 Bridling his will, and maistering his might :
 Till that he came vnto another gate,
 No gate, but like one, being goodly dight 480
 With boughes and braunches, which did broad dilate
 Their clasping armes, in wanton wreathings intricate.

So fashioned a Porch with rare deuce,
 Archt ouerhead with an embracing vine,
 Whose bounches hanging downe, seemed to entice
 All passers by, to taste their lushious wine,
 And did themselues into their hands incline,
 As freely offering to be gathered :
 Some deepe empurpled as the *Hyacint*,
 Some as the Rubine, laughing sweetly red, 490
 Some like faire *Emeraudes*, not yet well ripened.

And them amongst, some were of burnisht gold,
 So made by art, to beautifie the rest,
 Which did themselues emongst the leaues enfold,
 As lurking from the vew of couetous guest,

l. 470, '*repayre*': l. 472, '*fayre*,' and so ll. 474 and 499: l. 473, '*cour-
 payre*': l. 478, '*Brydling* . . . *maystering*': l. 481, '*bowres*': l. 482, '*second*': l. 489, '*Hyacine*,' 1611: l. 490, '*sweetely*': l. 493, '*bou-*

That the weake bowes, with so rich load opprest,
 Did bow adowne, as ouer-burdened.
 Vnder that Porch a comely dame did reft,
 Clad in faire weedes, but fowle disordered,
 And garments loose, that seemd vnmeet for womanhed.

In her left hand a Cup of gold she held, 501
 And with her right the riper fruit did reach,
 Whose fappy liquor, that with fulnesse sweld,
 Into her cup she scruzd, with daintie breach
 Of her fine fingers, without fowle empeach,
 That so faire wine-presse made the wine more sweet:
 Thereof she vfd to giue to drinke to each,
 Whom passing by she happened to meet :
 It was her guise, all Straungers goodly so to greet,

So she to *Guyon* offred it to tast ; 510
 Who taking it out of her tender hond,
 The cup to ground did violently cast,
 That all in peeces it was broken fond,
 And with the liquor stained all the lond :
 Whereat *Excesse* exceedingly was wroth,
 Yet no'te the same amend, ne yet withstond,
 But suffered him to passe, all were she loth ;
 Who not regarding her displeasure, forward goth.

There the most daintie Paradise on ground,
 It selfe doth offer to his sober eye, 520
 In which all pleasures plenteously abound,
 And none does others happinesse enuye :
 The painted flowres, the trees vps shooting hye,
 The dales for shade, the hilles for breathing space,

l. 510, , for ; : l. 518, , after 'displeasure' accepted : l. 521, 'abound.'

The trembling groues, the Chrifall running by ;
 And that, which all faire workes doth moft aggrace,
 The art, which all that wrought, appeared in no
 place.

One would haue thought, (fo cunningly, the rude,
 And fcorned parts were mingled with the fine,)
 That nature had for wantonneffe enfude 530
 Art, and that Art at nature did repine ;
 So / ftriuing each th'other to vndermine,
 Each did the others worke more beautifie ;
 So diff'ring both in willes, agreed in fine :
 So all agreed through sweete diuerfitie,
 This Gardin to adorne with all varietie.

And in the midft of all, a fountaine flood,
 Of richeft fubftaunce, that on earth might bee,
 So pure and fhiny, that the filuer flood
 Through euery channell running one might fee ;
 Moft goodly it with curious imageree 541
 Was ouer-wrought, and fhapes of naked boyes,
 Of which fome feemd with liuely iollitee,
 To fly about, playing their wanton toyes,
 Whileft others did them felues embay in liquid ioyes.

And ouer all, of pureft gold was fprede,
 A trayle of yuie in his native hew :
 For the rich mettall was fo coloured,
 That wight, who did not well auif'd it vew,

l. 525, '*chriſtall*': l. 533, '*beautify*': l. 535, '*diuerſity*': l. 536,
 '*variety*': l. 538, '*ſubſtance*': l. 541, '*ymagerie*,' and in 1609 '*pure*' for
 '*curious*': l. 542, '*ouerwrought*': l. 545, '*Whyleft*': l. 549, (.) for (i).



Would surely deeme it to be yuie trew : 550
 Low his lasciuious armes adown did creepe,
 That themselues dipping in the siluer dew,
 Their fleecy flowres they tenderly did steepe,
 Which drops of Christall seemd for wantones to weepe.

Infit streames continually did well
 Out of this fountaine, sweet and faire to see,
 The which into an ample lauer fell,
 And shortly grew to so great quantitie,
 That like a little lake it seemd to bee ;
 Whose depth exceeded not three cubits hight, 560
 That through the waues one might the bottom see,
 All pau'd beneath with Iaspar shining bright,
 That seemd the fountaine in that sea did sayle vpright. /

And all the margent round about was fet,
 With shady Laurell trees, thence to defend
 The funny beames, which on the billowes bet,
 And those which therein bathed, mote offend.
 As *Guyon* hapned by the same to wend,
 Two naked Damzelles he therein espyde,
 Which therein bathing, seemed to contend, 570
 And wrestle wantonly, ne car'd to hyde,
 Their dainty parts from vew of any, which them eyde.

Sometimes the one would lift the other quight
 Aboue the waters, and then downe againe
 Her plong, as ouer maistered by might,
 Where both awhile would couered remaine,

l. 550, 'bee' : l. 553, 'fearefully' : l. 559, 'litle' : l. 560, 'bottom' misspelt 'bortom' in '96 : l. 564, 'felt,' and so all the rhyme-words in the stanza two t's : l. 567, 'for' : l. 572, 'partes . . . eyd' : l. 575, 'maystered.'

And each the other from to rife reſtraine ;
 The whiles their ſnowy limbes, as through a vele,
 So through the Chriſtall waues appeared plaine :
 Then ſuddeinly both would themſelues vnhele 580
 And th'amarous ſweet ſpoiles to greedy eyes reuele.

As that faire Starre, the meſſenger of morne,
 His deawy face out of the ſea doth reare :
 Or as the *Cyprian* goddeſſe, newly borne
 Of th'Oceans fruitfull froth, did firſt appeare :
 Such ſeemed they, and ſo their yellow heare
 Chriſtalline humour dropped downe apace.
 Whom ſuch when *Guyon* ſaw, he drew him neare,
 And ſomewhat gan relent his earneſt pace,
 His ſtubborne breaſt gan ſecret pleaſaunce to embrace.

The wanton Maidens him eſpying, ſtood 591
 Gazing a while at his vnwonted guiſe ;
 Then th'one her ſelfe low ducked in the flood,
 Abaſht, that her a ſtraunger did auiſe :
 But / th'other rather higher did ariſe,
 And her two lilly paps aloft diſplayd,
 And all, that might his melting hart entife
 To her delights, ſhe vnto him bewrayd :
 The reſt hid vnderneath, him more deſirous made.

With that, the other likewiſe vp aroſe, 600
 And her faire lockes, which formerly were bownd
 Vp in one knot, ſhe low adowne did loſe :
 Which flowing long and thick, her cloth'd arownd,

l. 579, '*chriſtall*' : l. 587, '*humor*' : l. 597, '*entyſe*' : l. 599, '*hidit*,'
 and ſo l. 607 : l. 602, '*knott*.'

And th'yuorie in golden mantle gownd :
 So that faire spectacle from him was reft,
 Yet that, which reft it, no leffe faire was fownd :
 So hid in lockes and waues from lookers theft,
 Nought but her louely face ſhe for his looking left.

Withall ſhe laughed, and ſhe bluſht withall,
 That bluſhing to her laughter gaue more grace, 610
 And laughter to her bluſhing, as did fall :
 Now when they ſpide the knight to ſlacke his pace,
 Them to behold, and in his ſparkling face
 The ſecret ſignes of kindled luſt appeare,
 Their wanton meriments they did encrease,
 And to him beckned, to approch more neare, (reare.
 And ſhewd him many fights, that courage cold could

On which when gazing him the Palmer ſaw,
 He much rebukt thoſe wandring eyes of his,
 And counſeld well, him forward thence did draw.
 Now are they come nigh to the *Bowre of blis* 621
 Of her fond fauorites ſo nam'd amis :
 When thus the Palmer ; Now Sir, well auife ;
 For here the end of all our trauell is :
 Here wonnes *Acraſia*, whom we muſt ſurpriſe,
 Elſe ſhe will ſlip away, and all our drift deſpiſe. /

Etſfoones they heard a moſt melodious ſound,
 Of all that mote delight a daintie eare,
 Such as attonce might not on liuing ground,
 Sauē in this Paradife, be heard elſwhere : 630

l. 612, 'ſpyde' : l. 614, 'ſecrete' : l. 617, 'corage' : l. 623, , for ; (1st) :
 l. 624, 'traneill' : l. 626, 'Els.'

Right hard it was, for wight, which did it heare,
To read, what manner muficke that mote bee :
For all that pleafing is to liuing eare,
Was there confortd in one harmonee,
Birdes, voyces, instruments, windes, waters, all agree.

The ioyous birdes shrouded in chearefull shade,
Their notes vnto the voyce attempted sweet ;
Th'Angelicall foft trembling voyces made
To th'instruments diuine refpondence meet :
The filuer founding instruments did meet 640
With the bafe murmure of the waters fall :
The waters fall with difference difcreet,
Now foft, now loud, vnto the wind did call :
The gentle warbling wind low answered to all.

There, whence that Mufick feemed heard to bee,
Was the faire Witch her felfe now folacing,
With a new Louer, whom through forceree
And witchcraft, ſhe from farre did thither bring :
There ſhe had him now layd a flombering,
In ſecret ſhade, after long wanton ioyes : 650
Whilft round about them pleaſauntly did ſing
Many faire Ladies, and laſciuious boyes,
That euer mixt their ſong with light licentious toyes.

And all that while, right ouer him ſhe hong,
With her falſe eyes faſt fixed in his fight,
As ſeeking medicine, whence ſhe was ſtong,
Or greedily depaſturing delight :

l. 637, 'voice' : l. 649, 'laid.'

And / oft inclining downe with kisses light,
 For feare of waking him, his lips bedewd,
 And through his humid eyes did sucke his spright,
 Quite molten into lust, and pleasure lewd ; 661
 Wherewith she fighed soft, as if his case she rewde.

The whiles some one did chaunt this louely lay ;
 Ah see, who so faire thing doest faine to see,
 In springing flowre the image of thy day ;
 Ah see the Virgin Rose, how sweetly shee
 Doth first peepe forth with bashfull modestee,
 That fairer seemes, the lesse ye see her may ;
 Lo see soone after, how more bold and free
 Her bared bosome she doth broad display ; 670
 Loe see soone after, how she fades, and falles away.

So passeth, in the passing of a day,
 Of mortall life the lease, the bud, the flowre,
 Ne more doth flourish after first decay,
 That earst was sought to decke both bed and bowre,
 Of many a Ladie, and many a Paramowre :
 Gather therefore the Rose, whilest yet is prime,
 For soone comes age, that will her pride deflowre :
 Gather the Rose of loue, whilest yet is time,
 Whilest louing thou mayst loued be with equall crime.

He ceast, and then gan all the quire of birdes 681
 Their diuerse notes t'attune vnto his lay,
 As in approuance of his pleasing words.
 The constant paire heard all, that he did say,

l. 664, 'fayre' : l. 671, 'Lo' : l. 675, 'deck' : l. 676, 'Lady' : l. 683,
 'approuaunce . . . wordes' : l. 684, 'payre.'

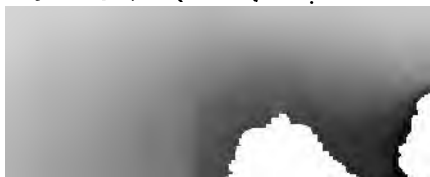
Yet swarued not, but kept their forward way,
 Through many couert groues, and thicketts close,
 In which they creeping did at last display
 That wanton Ladie, with her louer lose,
 Whose sleepe head she in her lap did fofte difpofe. /

Vpon a bed of Rofes she was layd, 690
 As faint through heat, or dight to pleafant fin,
 And was arayd, or rather difarayd,
 All in a vele of filke and filuer thin,
 That hid no whit her alablaster skin,
 But rather fhewd more white, if more might bee :
 More fubtile web *Arachne* can not fpin,
 Nor the fine nets, which oft we wouen fee
 Of fcorched dew, do not in th'aire more lightly flee.

Her fnowy breft was bare to readie fpoyle
 Of hungry eies, which n'ote therewith be fild, 700
 And yet through languour of her late sweet toyle,
 Few drops, more cleare then Nectar, forth diftild,
 That like pure Orient perles adowne it trild,
 And her faire eyes sweet fmyling in delight,
 Moyftened their fierie beames, with which she thrild
 Fraile harts, yet quenched not ; like ftarry light
 Which fparckling on the filent waues, does feeme more
 bright.

The young man fleeping by her, feemd to bee
 Some goodly fwayne of honorable place,

l. 688, '*Thot*,' but corrected in '*Faults efcafed*': *ib.*, '*Lady*': l. 693, '*uele*': l. 694, '*alablaster*,' and so in '96, 1609, 1611, and in 1679 first '*alablaster*': l. 698, '*ayre*': l. 699, '*ready*': l. 708, '*be*.'



That certes it great pittie was to see 710
 Him his nobilitie so foule deface ;
 A sweet regard, and amiable grace,
 Mixed with manly sternnesse did appeare
 Yet sleeping, in his well proportiond face,
 And on his tender lips the downy heare
 Did now but freshly spring, and filken blossomes beare.

His warlike armes, the idle instruments
 Of sleeping praise, were hong upon a tree,
 And his braue shield, full of old monuments,
 Was fowly ra'ft, that none the signes might see ;
 Ne / for them, ne for honour cared hee, 721
 Ne ought, that did to his aduancement tend,
 But in lewd loues, and waftfull luxuree,
 His dayes, his goods, his bodie he did spend :
 O horrible enchantment, that him so did blend.

The noble Elfe, and carefull Palmer drew
 So nigh them, minding nought, but lustfull game,
 That fuddein forth they on them rusht, and threw
 A subtile net, which onely for the same
 The skilfull Palmer formally did frame. 730
 So held them vnder fast, the whiles the rest
 Fled all away for feare of fowler shame.
 The fair Enchauntresse, so vnwares opprest,
 Tryde all her arts, & all her sleights, thence out to wrest.

And eke her louer stroue : but all in vaine ;
 For that same net so cunningly was wound,

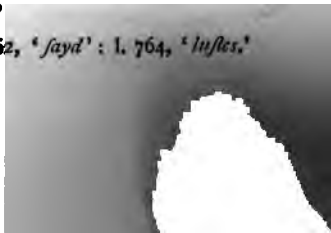
l. 710, 'pitty': l. 711, 'nobility . . . foule': l. 716, 'blossoms': l. 717, 'Armes . . . ydle': l. 720, , for ; : l. 729, 'only': *ib.*, Dr. Morris inadvertently assigns '*that same*' to 1590, and '*the same*' to 1596—it is the converse.

That neither guile, nor force might it diftraine.
 They tooke them both, & both them strongly bound
 In captiue bandes, which there they readie found :
 But her in chaines of adamant he tyde ; 740
 For nothing else might keepe her safe and found ;
 But *Verdant* (so he hight) he soone vntyde,
 And counsell sage in steed thereof to him applyde.

But all those pleasant bowres and Pallace braue,
Guyon broke downe, with rigour pittilesse :
 Ne ought their goodly workmanship might faue
 Them from the tempest of his wrathfulnesse,
 But that their blisse he turn'd to balefulnesse :
 Their groues he feld, their gardins did deface,
 Their arbers spoyld, their Cabinets suppressse, 750
 Their banket houses burne, their buildings race,
 And of the fairest late, now made the fowleſt place. /

Then led they her away, and eke that knight
 They with them led, both sorrowfull and ſad :
 The way they came, the ſame retourn'd they right
 Till they arriued, where they lately had
 Charm'd thoſe wild-beaſts, that rag'd with furie mad.
 Which now awaking, fierce at them gan fly,
 As in their miſtreſſe reſkew, whom they lad ;
 But them the Palmer ſoone did pacify. 760
 Then *Guyon* aſkt, what meant thoſe beaſtes, which there
 (did ly.
 Said he, theſe ſeeming beaſts are men indeed,
 Whom this Enchauntreſſe hath transformed thus,
 Whylome her louers, which her luſts did feed,
 Now turned into figures hideous,

l. 750, 'ſpoyle' [sic] : l. 752, 'ſayreſt' : l. 762, 'ſayd' : l. 764, 'luſter.'



According to their mindes like monstuous.
 Sad end (quoth he) of life intemperate,
 And mournfull meed of ioyes delicious :
 But Palmer, if it mote thee so aggrate,
 Let them returned be vnto their former state. 770

Streight way he with his vertuous staffe them strooke,
 And streight of beasts they comely men became ;
 Yet being men they did vnmanly looke,
 And stared ghastly, some for inward shame,
 And some for wrath, to see their captiue Dame :
 But one aboute the rest in speciall,
 That had an hog beene late, hight *Grille* by name,
 Repined greatly, and did him miscall,
 That had from hoggish forme him brought to naturall.

Said *Guyon*, See the mind of beastly man, 780
 That hath so foone forgot the excellence
 Of his creation, when he life began,
 That now he chooseth, with vile difference,
 To / be a beast, and lacke intelligence.
 To whom the Palmer thus, The donghill kind
 Delights in filth and foule incontinence :
 Let *Grill* be *Grill*, and haue his hoggish mind,
 But let vs hence depart, whilest wether serues and wind.

1. 772, 'beastes': 1. 778, 'Repynd': 1. 780, 'Saide': 1. 783, 'Chooseth'
 [sic]: 1. 785, 'kinde': 1. 786, 'Delightes . . . fowle': 1. 787, 'Gryll' (bis)
 . . . minde': 1. 788, ' & winde.'



THE THIRD BOOKE OF THE FAERIE QVEENE.

Contayning,
THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS.
OR
Of Chastitie.

IT falles me here to write of Chastity,
That fairest vertue, farre aboue the rest;
For which what needs me fetch from *Faery* 10
Forreine ensamples, it to haue exprest?
Sith it is shrined in my Soueraines brest,
And form'd so liuely in each perfect part
That to all Ladies, which haue it profest,
Need but behold the pourtraiçt of her hart,
If pourtrayd it might be by any liuing art.

ll. 1, 2, 5, 6, Roman: l. 1, 'thirde': l. 4, 'Contayning' Italics: l. 7, 'Chastity': l. 8, 'falls': l. 9, 'The fayrest...far'—not 'fayrest,' as Dr. Morris says, in '96: l. 10, 'needs': l. 13, 'formd': l. 16, 'bee.'



But liuing art may not leaft part expresse,
 Nor life-refembling pencill it can paint,
 All were it *Zeuxis* or *Praxiteles* :
 His dædale hand would faile, and greatly faint, / 20
 And her perfektions with his error taint :
 Ne Poets wit, that paffeth Painter farre
 In picturing the parts of beautie daint,
 So hard a workmanship aduenture darre,
 For fear through want of words her excellence to marre.

How then fhall I, Apprentice of the skill,
 That whylome in diuineft wits did raine,
 Prefume fo high to stretch mine humble quill ?
 Yet now my luckleffe lot doth me conftaine
 Hereto perforce. But ô dred Soueraine 30
 Thus farre forth pardon, fith that choicest wit
 Cannot your glorious pourtraict figure plaine
 That I in colourd fhoves may fhadow it,
 And antique praifes vnto prefent perfons fit.

But if in liuing colours, and right hew,
 Your felfe you couet to fee pictured,
 Who can it doe more liuely, or more trew,
 Then that sweet verfe, with *Nectar* fprinkeled,
 In which a gracious feruant pictured
 His *Cynthia*, his heauens faireft light ? 40
 That with his melting sweetneffe rauifhed,

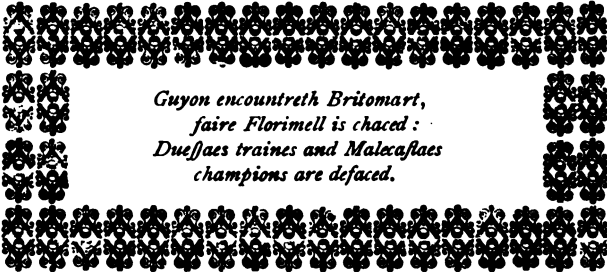
l. 18, 'paynt': l. 20, 'faynt': l. 21, 'taynt': l. 22, 'witt': l. 23, 'beauty daynt': l. 24, 'workeman/ship': l. 27, 'whilome . . . rayne,' and all the rhyme-words in the stanza 'ayne': l. 29, 'luckelesse lott': l. 30, 'O dredd Souerayne': l. 31, 'far . . . witt': l. 33, 'itt': l. 34, 'fitt': l. 36, 'Thy felfe . . . thou': l. 38, 'sweete': l. 39, 'feruaunt': l. 40, 'fayref': l. 41, 'sweetnes.'

And with the wonder of her beames bright,
My senses lulled are in slomber of delight.

But let that fame delitious Poet lend
A little leaue vnto a rusticke Muse
To sing his mistresse prayse, and let him mend,
If ought amis her liking may abuse :
Ne let his fairest *Cynthia* refuse,
In mirrours more then one her selfe to see,
But either *Gloriana* let her chuse, 50
Or in *Belphebe* fashioned to bee :
In th'one her rule, in th'other her rare chafitee.

l. 43, 'sences' : l. 48, 'fayrest.'

Cant. / I.



*Guyon encountreth Britomart,
faire Florimell is chased :
Duelles traines and Malecastaes
champions are defaced.*

THE famous Briton Prince and Faerie knight,
After long wayes and perilous paines endured,
Hauing their wearie limbes to perfect plight
Reftord, and fory wounds right well recured,
Of the faire *Alma* greatly were procured, 10
To make there lenger sojourne and abode ;
But when thereto they might not be allured,
From seeking praise, and deeds of armes abroad,
They courteous conge tooke, and forth together yode.

But the captiu'd *Acrafia* he sent,
Because of trauell long, a nigher way,
With a strong gard, all reskew to preuent,
And her to Faerie court safe to conuay,
That her for witnesse of his hard affay,

l. 3, '*Fayre*': l. 4, '*Malecastaes*'—misprinted '*Materastaes*' in '90 and '96, but corrected in '*Faults escaped*' of the former: l. 6, '*Faery*': l. 7, '*endur'd*': l. 8, '*weary*': l. 9, '*recur'd*': l. 10, '*procur'd*': l. 12, '*allur'd*': l. 16, '*traueill*': l. 18, '*Faery*,' and so l. 20: l. 19, '*witnes*'

Vnto his *Faerie* Queene he might present: 20
But he himselfe betooke another way,
To make more triall of his hardiment,
And seeke aduentures, as he with Prince *Arthur* went.

Long so they trauelled through wastefull wayes,
Where daungers dwelt, and perils most did wonne,
To hunt for glorie and renowmed praise ;
Full many Countries they did ouerronne, /
From the vprising to the setting Sunne,
And many hard aduentures did atchieue ;
Of all the which they honour euer wonne, 30
Seeking the weake oppressed to relieue,
And to recouer right for such, as wrong did grieve.

At last as through an open plaine they yode,
They spide a knight, that towards pricked faire,
And him beside an aged Squire there rode,
That seem'd to couch vnder his shield three-square,
As if that age bad him that burden spare,
And yield it those, that stouter could it wield :
He them espying, gan himselfe prepare,
And on his arme addressse his goodly shield 40
That bore a Lion passant in a golden field.

Which seeing good Sir *Guyon*, deare befought
The Prince of grace, to let him runne that turne.
He graunted : then the Faery quickly raught
His poinant speare, and sharpely gan to spurne

l. 24, 'traueiled': l. 26, 'glory . . . prayse': l. 27, 'Countreyes': l. 34, 'fayre': l. 37, 'badd': l. 43, 'ronne': l. 45, 'poynant . . . sharply.'

His fomy steed, whose fierie feete did burne
 The verdant grasse, as he thereon did tread ;
 Ne did the other backe his foot returne,
 But fiercely forward came withouten dread,
 And bent his dreadfull speare against the others head. 50

They bene ymet, and both their points arriued,
 But *Guyon* droue so furious and fell,
 That seem'd both shield & plate it would haue riued;
 Nathelesse it bore his foe not from his fell,
 But made him stagger, as he were not well :
 But *Guyon* selfe, ere well he was aware,
 Nigh a speares length behind his crouper fell,
 Yet in his fall so well him selfe he bare,
 That mischieuous mischance his life & limbes did spare.

Great / shame and sorrow of that fall he tooke ; 60
 For neuer yet, fith warlike armes he bore,
 And shiuering speare in bloudie field first shooke,
 He found himselfe dishonored so sore.
 Ah gentlest knight, that euer armour bore,
 Let not thee grieue dismounted to haue beene,
 And brought to ground, that neuer waft before ;
 For not thy fault, but secret powre vnseene,
 That speare enchanted was, which layd thee on the
 greene.

But weenedst thou what wight thee ouerthrew,
 Much greater grieve and shamefuller regret 70

l. 46, 'fiery': l. 47, 'gras': l. 48, 'foole': l. 51, 'beene ymett . . . theyr
 . . . arriu'd': l. 53, 'seemd . . . and . . . riu'd': l. 59, 'mischaunce . . .
 limbs': l. 62, 'bloody': l. 64, 'armor': l. 65, 'the': l. 66, 'ground':
 l. 70, 'regrett,' and so all the rhyme-words in the stanza, two t's.

For thy hard fortune then thou wouldst renew,
 That of a fingle damzell thou wert met
 On equall plaine, and there so hard beset ;
 Euen the famous *Britomart* it was,
 Whom straunge aduenture did from *Britaine* fet,
 To seeke her loue (loue farre fought alas.)
 Whose image she had seene in *Venus* looking glas.

Full of difdainefull wrath, he fierce vprofe,
 For to reuenge that foule reprochfull shame,
 And snatching his bright sword began to close 80
 With her on foot, and stoutly forward came ;
 Die rather would he, then endure that fame.
 Which when his Palmer saw, he gan to feare
 His toward perill and vntoward blame,
 Which by that new rencounter he should reare :
 For death fate on the point of that enchaunted speare.

And hasting towards him gan faire perswade,
 Not to prouoke misfortune, nor to weene
 His speares default to mend with cruell blade ;
 For by his mightie Science he had seene / 90
 The secret vertue of that weapon keene,
 That mortall puissance mote not withstond :
 Nothing on earth mote alwaies happie beene.
 Great hazard were it, and aduenture fond,
 To loose long gotten honour with one euill hond.

By such good meanes he him discounfelled,
 From prosecuting his reuenging rage ;

l. 75, '*Britayne*': l. 76, '*far*': l. 77, '*hee*': l. 79, '*foule reprochfull*':
 l. 82, '*Dye*': l. 87, '*fayre*': l. 91, '*secrete*': l. 92, '*puissance*': l. 93,
 '*happy*.'



And eke the Prince like treaty handeled,
 His wrathfull will with reason to asswage,
 And laid the blame, not to his carriage, 100
 But to his starting steed, that swaru'd asyde,
 And to the ill purueyance of his page,
 That had his furnitures not firmly tyde :
 So is his angry courage fairely pacifyde.

Thus reconcilment was betweene them knit,
 Through goodly temperance, and affection chaste,
 And either vovd with all their power and wit,
 To let not others honour be defaste,
 Of friend or foe, who euer it embaste,
 Ne armes to beare against the others syde : 110
 In which accord the Prince was also plaste,
 And with that golden chaine of concord tyde.
 So goodly all agreed, they forth yfere did ryde.

O goodly vfage of those antique times,
 In which the sword was seruant vnto right ;
 When not for malice and contentious crimes,
 But all for praise, and prooffe of manly might,
 The martiall brood accustomed to fight :
 Then honour was the meed of victorie,
 And yet the vanquished had no despight : 120
 Let later age that noble vse enuie,
 Vile rancour to auoid, and cruell surquedrie.

Long / they thus trauelled in friendly wife,
 Through countries waste, and eke well edifyde,

l. 99, 'asswage' : l. 102, 'purueyance' : l. 104, 'courage fayrly' : l. 105, 'knitt' : l. 106, 'temperance' : l. 107, 'witt' : l. 114, 'tymes' : l. 115, 'seruant' : l. 116, 'crimes' : l. 117, 'praysse' : l. 119, 'victory' : l. 121, 'enuy' : l. 122, 'rancor . . . cruel surquedry' : l. 123, 'traueiled' : l. 124, 'countreyes.'

Seeking aduentures hard, to exercife
 Their puiffance, whylome full dernely tryde :
 At length they came into a forreft wyde,
 Whose hideous horror and sad trembling found
 Full grielly seem'd : Therein they long did ryde,
 Yet tract of liuing creatures none they found, 130
 Saue Beares, Lions, & Buls, which romed them
 around.

All suddenly out of the thickeft brufh,
 Vpon a milke-white Palfrey all alone,
 A goodly Ladie did foreby them rufh,
 Whose face did feeme as cleare as Chrif tall ftone,
 And eke through feare as white as whales bone :
 Her garments all were wrought of beaten gold,
 And all her fteed with tinfell trappings shone,
 Which fled fo faft, that nothing mote him hold,
 And fcarfe them leafure gaue, her paffing to behold.

Still as fhe fled, her eye fhe backward threw, 141
 As fearing euill, that purfewd her faft ;
 And her faire yellow locks behind her flew,
 Loofely difperft with puffe of euery blaft :
 All as a blazing ftarre doth farre outcaft
 His hearie beames, and flaming lockes difpred,
 At fight whereof the people ftand aghaft :
 But the fage wifard telles, as he has red,
 That it importunes death and dolefull drierihed.

l. 125, '*puiffaunce* . . . *dernly*' : l. 127, '*foreft*' : l. 128, '*fownd*' :
 l. 129, '*feemd*' : l. 130, '*fownd*' : l. 131, '*arownd*' : l. 133, '*milkewhite*' :
 l. 134, '*Lady*' : l. 139, '*fledd*,' and so l. 141 : l. 142, '*purfewd*' : l. 144,
 '*puff*' : l. 146, '*dispredd*' : l. 148, '*redd*' : l. 149, '*dreeryhedd*'.

So as they gazed after her a while, 150
 Lo where a griesly Foster forth did rush,
 Breathing out beastly lust her to defile :
 His tyreling iade he fiercely forth did push, /
 Through thicke and thin, both ouer banke and bush
 In hope her to attaine by hooke or crooke,
 That from his gorie sides the bloud did gush :
 Large were his limbes, and terrible his looke,
 And in his clownish hand a sharp bore speare he shooke.

Which outrage when those gentle knights did see,
 Full of great enuie and fell gealofy, 160
 They stayd not to auise, who first should bee,
 But all spurd after fast, as they mote fly,
 To reskew her from shamefull villany.
 The Prince and *Guyon* equally byliue
 Her selfe pursewd, in hope to win thereby
 Most goodly meede, the fairest Dame aliuie :
 But after the foule foster *Timias* did striue.

The whiles faire *Britomart*, whose constant mind,
 Would not so lightly follow beauties chace,
 Ne reckt of Ladies Loue, did stay behind, 170
 And them awayted there a certaine space,
 To weet if they would turne backe to that place :
 But when she saw them gone, she forward went,
 As lay her iourney, through that perlous Pace,
 With stedfast courage and stout hardiment ;
 Ne euill thing she fear'd, ne euill thing she ment.

l. 150, 'whyle' : l. 151, 'foster' : l. 152, 'defyle' : l. 153, 'Iade . . .
 fierfly' : l. 154, 'banck' : l. 156, 'gory sydes . . . blood' : l. 160, 'enuy' :
 l. 170, 'bekynd' : l. 175, 'corage' : l. 176, 'euil . . . feard.'

At last as nigh out of the wood she came,
 A stately Castle farre away she spyde,
 To which her steps directly she did frame.
 That Castle was most goodly edifyde, 180
 And plasfte for pleasure nigh that forrest syde :
 But faire before the gate a spacious plaine,
 Mantled with greene, it selfe did spredden wyde,
 On which she saw fixe knights that did darraine
 Fierce battell against one, with cruell might and maine.

Mainly / they all attonce vpon him laid,
 And fore beset on euery side around,
 That nigh he breathlesse grew, yet nought dismaid,
 Ne euer to them yielded foot of ground
 All had he lost much blood through many a wound,
 But stoutly dealt his blowes, and euery way 191
 To which he turned in his wrathfull stound,
 Made them recoile, and fly from dred decay,
 That none of all the fixe before, him durst assay.

Like daftard Cures, that hauing at a bay
 The saluage beast embost in wearie chace,
 Dare not aduenture on the stubborne pray,
 Ne byte before, but rome from place to place,
 To get a snatch, when turned is his face.
 In such distresse and doubtfull ieopardy, 200
 When *Britomart* him saw, she ran a pace
 Vnto his reskew, and with earnest cry,
 Bad thofe same fixe forbear that fingle enemy.

l. 178, 'far': l. 182, 'playne': l. 184, 'fix . . . darrayne': l. 185, 'Fiers
 battaill . . . cruel . . . mayne': l. 186, 'Mainely' (catch-word): l. 187,
 'around,' and so all the rhyme-words of the stanza 'wond': l. 190,
 'blood': l. 193, 'dredd': l. 194, 'fix,' and so l. 214: l. 203, 'Badd.

But to her cry they list not lenden eare,
 Ne ought the more their mightie strokes surceasse,
 But gathering him round about more neare,
 Their direfull rancour rather did encrease ;
 Till that she rushing through the thickest preasse,
 Perforce disparted their compacted gyre,
 And soone compeld to hearken vnto peace : 210
 Tho gan she myldly of them to inquire
 The cause of their diffention and outrageous yre.

Whereto that single knight did answere frame ;
 These fixe would me enforce by oddes of might,
 To chaunge my lief, and loue another Dame,
 That death me liefer were, then such despight,
 So vnto wrong to yield my wrested right :
 For I loue one, the truest one on ground,
 Ne list me chaunge ; she th'*Errant Damzell* hight,
 For whose deare sake full many a bitter stownd, 220
 I haue endur'd, and tasted many a bloudy wound.

Certes (said she) then bene ye fixe to blame,
 To weene your wrong by force to iustifie :
 For knight to leaue his Ladie were great shame,
 That faithfull is, and better were to die.
 All losse is lesse, and lesse the infamie,
 Then losse of loue to him, that loues but one ;
 Ne may loue be compeld by maisterie ;
 For soone as maisterie comes, sweet loue anone
 Taketh his nimble wings, and soone away is gone. 230

l. 206, '*round*': l. 217, '*vnro*' [*sic*]: l. 218, '*ground*': l. 219, '*damzell*': l. 221, '*endurd* . . . *bloody wound*': l. 223, '*iustify*,' and so all the rhyme-words in the stanza '*y*' not '*ie*': l. 224, '*Lady*': l. 229, '*maistry*': l. 230, '*winges*.'

Then spake one of those fixe, There dwelleth here
 Within this castle wall a Ladie faire,
 Whose foueraine beautie hath no liuing pere,
 Thereto so bounteous and so debonaire,
 That neuer any mote with her compaire.
 She hath ordaind this law, which we approue,
 That euery knight, which doth this way repaire,
 In case he haue no Ladie, nor no loue,
 Shall doe vnto her seruice neuer to remoue.

But if he haue a Ladie or a Loue, 240
 Then must he her forgoe with foule defame,
 Or else with vs by dint of sword approue,
 That she is fairer, then our fairest Dame,
 As did this knight, before ye hither came.
 Perdie (said *Britomart*) the choise is hard :
 But what reward had he, that ouercame ?
 He should aduaunced be to high regard,
 (Said they) and haue our Ladies loue for his reward.

There / fore a read Sir, if thou haue a loue.
 Loue haue I fure, (quoth she) but Lady none ; 250
 Yet will I not fro mine owne loue remoue,
 Ne to your Lady will I seruice done, (loue,
 But wreake your wrongs wrought to this knight a-
 And proue his cause. With that her mortall speare
 She mightily auentred towards one,
 And downe him smot, ere well aware he weare,
 Then to the next she rode, & downe the next did beare.

l. 231, 'fix': l. 232, 'Lady fayre,' and so all the rhyme-words of the stanza 'yre' not 'ire': ll. 238, 240, 'Lady': l. 241, 'foule': l. 244, 'hether' l. 245, 'Perdy': l. 253, 'wronges.'

Ne did she stay, till three on ground she layd,
 That none of them himselfe could reare againe ;
 The fourth was by that other knight difmayd, 260
 All were he wearie of his former paine,
 That now there do but two of six remaine ;
 Which two did yield, before she did them smight.
 Ah (saide she then) now may ye all see plaine,
 That truth is strong, and trew loue most of might,
 That for his trusty seruants doth so strongly fight.

Too well we see, (saide they) and proue too well
 Our faulty weaknesse, and your matchlesse might :
 For thy, faire Sir, yours be the Damozell,
 Which by her owne law to your lot doth light, 270
 And we your liege men faith vnto you plight.
 So vnderneath her feet their swords they mard,
 And after her befought, well as they might,
 To enter in, and reape the dew reward :
 She graunted, and then in they all together far'd.

Long were it to describe the goodly frame,
 And stately port of *Castle Ioyeous*,
 (For so that Castle hight by commune name)
 Where they were entertained with courteous /
 And comely glee of many gracious 280
 Faire Ladies, and many a gentle knight,
 Who through a Chamber long and spacious,
 Eftsoones them brought vnto their Ladies sight.
 That of them cleeped was the *Lady of delight*.

l. 264, 'sayd': l. 267, 'saide': l. 268, 'weakenes': l. 269, , from '90 after 'thy'—accepted: l. 272, 'mard'—misprinted 'shard' in '90 and '96, but corrected in 'Faults escaped' of the former: l. 278, 'commun': l. 279, 'entertaynd': l. 280, 'gratious.'

But for to tell the sumptuous aray
 Of that great chamber, should be labour lost :
 For liuing wit, I weene, cannot display
 The royall riches and exceeding cost,
 Of euery pillour and of euery post ;
 Which all of purest bullion framed were, 290
 And with great pearles and pretious stones emboft,
 That the bright glister of their beames cleare
 Did sparckle forth great light, and glorious did appeare.

These straunger knights through passing, forth were led
 Into an inner rowme, whose royaltee
 And rich purueyance might vneath be red ;
 Mote Princes place be seeme so deckt to bee.
 Which statly manner when as they did see,
 The image of superfluous riotize,
 Exceeding much the state of meane degree, 300
 They greatly wondred, whence so sumptuous guize
 Might be maintaynd, and each gan diuerfely deuize.

The wals were round about apparelled
 With costly clothes of *Arras* and of *Toure*,
 In which with cunning hand was pourtrahed
 The loue of *Venus* and her Paramoure
 The faire *Adonis*, turned to a flowre,
 A worke of rare deuice, and wondrous wit.
 First did it shew the bitter balefull stowre,
 Which her assayd with many a seruient fit, 310
 When first her tender hart was with his beautie fmit.

l. 288, '*roiall*': l. 291, '*perles*': l. 301, '*sumptuous*': l. 303, '*apparelled*'
 —a broken '*l*' has misled Dr. Morris to print '*appareilled*': l. 307,
 '*fayre*.'

Then / with what sleights and sweet allurements she
 Entyft the Boy, as well that art she knew,
 And wooed him her Paramoure to be ;
 Now making girlonds of each flowre that grew,
 To crowne his golden lockes with honour dew ;
 Now leading him into a secret shade
 From his Beauperes, and from bright heauens vew,
 Where him to sleepe she gently would perfwade,
 Or bathe him in a fountaine by some couert glade. 320

And whilst he slept, she ouer him would spred
 Her mantle, colour'd like the starry skyes,
 And her soft arme lay vnderneath his hed,
 And with ambrosiall kisses bathe his eyes ;
 And whilest he bath'd, with her two crafty spyes,
 She secretly would search each daintie lim,
 And throw into the well sweet Rosemaryes,
 And fragrant violets, and Pances trim,
 And euer with sweet Nectar she did sprinkle him.

So did she steale his heedelesse hart away, 330
 And ioyd his loue in secret vnespyde.
 But for she saw him bent to cruell play,
 To hunt the saluage beaft in forrest wyde,
 Dreadfull of daunger, that mote him betyde,
 She oft and oft aduiz'd him to refraine
 From chafe of greater beasts, whose brutish pryde
 Mote breede him scath vnwares : but all in vaine ;
 For who can shun the chaunce, that dest'ny doth
 ordaine ?

l. 314, 'bee' : l. 328, 'Pauces' : l. 336, 'beastes' : l. 338, 'chance.'

Lo, where beyond he lyeth languifhing,
 Deadly engored of a great wild Bore, 340
 And by his fide the Goddeffe groueling
 Makes for him endleffe mone, and euermore /
 With her foft garment wipes away the gore,
 Which ftaines his fnowy fkin with hatefull hew :
 But when ſhe ſaw no helpe might him reſtore,
 Him to a dainty flowre ſhe did tranſmew,
 Which in that cloth was wrought, as if it liuely grew.

So was that chamber clad in goodly wize,
 And round about it many beds were dight,
 As whilome was the antique worldes guize, 350
 Some for vntimely eaſe, ſome for delight,
 As pleaſed them to uſe, that uſe it might :
 And all was full of Damzels, and of Squires,
 Dauncing and reueling both day and night,
 And ſwimming deepe in ſenfuall deſires,
 And *Cupid* ſtill emongſt them kindled luſtfull fires.

And all the while ſweet Muſicke did diuide
 Her looſer notes with *Lydian* harmony ;
 And all the while ſweet birdes thereto applide
 Their daintie layes and dulcet melody, 360
 Ay caroling of loue and iollity,
 That wonder was to heare their trim comfort.
 Which when thoſe knights beheld, with ſcornefull eye,
 They fdeigned ſuch laſciuious diſport,
 And loath'd the looſe demeanure of that wanton fort.

l. 344, 'ſtaynes': l. 349, 'round' : l. 350, 'whylome': l. 353, 'Squyres':
 l. 355, 'deſyres': l. 356, 'fgyres.'

Thence they were brought to that great Ladies vew,
 Whom they found fitting on a sumptuous bed,
 That glistered all with gold and glorious shew,
 As the proud *Persian* Queenes accustomed :
 She seemd a woman of great bountihed, 370
 And of rare beautie, fauing that askaunce
 Her wanton eyes, ill signes of womanhed,
 Did roll too highly, and too often glaunce,
 Without regard of grace, or comely amenaunce.

Long / worke it were, and needlesse to deuize
 Their goodly entertainment and great glee :
 She caused them be led in curteous wize
 Into a bowre, difarmed for to bee,
 And cheared well with wine and spiceree :
 The *Redcrosse* Knight was soone difarmed there, 380
 But the braue Mayd would not difarmed bee,
 But onely vented vp her vmbriere,
 And so did let her goodly visage to appere.

As when faire *Cynthia*, in darke some night,
 Is in a noyous cloud enueloped,
 Where she may find the substaunce thin and light,
 Breakes forth her siluer beames, and her bright hed
 Discouers to the world discomfited ;
 Of the poore traueller, that went astray,
 With thousand bleffings she is heried ; 390
 Such was the beautie and the shining ray,
 With which faire *Britomart* gaue light vnto the day.

l. 373, 'lightly' for 'highly' of '90 and '96 in 1609 : l. 378, 'hee':
 l. 384, 'fayre.' and so l. 392 : l. 386, 'finde . . . substance' : l. 389,
 'trauailer.'

And eke those fix, which lately with her fought,
 Now were difarmd, and did them selues present
 Vnto her vew, and company vnfought :
 For they all seemed curteous and gent,
 And all fixe brethren, borne of one parent,
 Which had them traynd in all ciuillitee,
 And goodly taught to tilt and turnament ;
 Now were they liegemen to this Lady free, 400
 And her knights seruice ought, to hold of her in fee.

The first of them by name *Gardante* hight,
 A iolly perfon, and of comely vew ;
 The second was *Parlante*, a bold knight,
 And next to him *Iocante* did enfew ; /
Basciante did him selfe most curteous shew ;
 But fierce *Bacchante* seemd too fell and keene ;
 And yet in armes *Noctante* greater grew :
 All were faire knights, and goodly well befeene,
 But to faire *Britomart* they all but shadowes beene. 410

For she was full of amiable grace,
 And manly terrour mixed therewithall,
 That as the one stird vp affections bace,
 So th'other did mens rash desires apall,
 And hold them backe, that would in error fall :
 As he, that hath espide a vermeill Rose,
 To which sharpe thornes and breres the way forfall,
 Dare not for dread his hardy hand expose,
 But wifhing it far off, his idle wish doth lose.

l. 395, '*vnfought*' : l. 396, '*courteous*,' and so l. 406 : l. 400, '*Ladie*' :
 l. 408, '*yett*' : l. 412, '*terror*' : l. 415, '*error*' : l. 416, '*hee*' : l. 419,
 '*ydle*.'

Whom when the Lady saw so faire a wight. 420
 All ignoraunt of her contrary sex,
 (For she her weend a fresh and lusty knight)
 She greatly gan enamoured to wex,
 And with vaine thoughts her falsed fancy vex :
 Her fickle hart conceiued hasty fire,
 Like sparkes of fire, which fall in sclender flex,
 That shortly brent into extreme desire,
 And ranfackt all her veines with passion entire.

Eftsoones she grew to great impatience
 And into termes of open outrage bruft, 430
 That plaine discouered her incontinence,
 Ne reckt she, who her meaning did mistrust ;
 For she was giuen all to fleshly lust,
 And poured forth in sensuall delight,
 That all regard of shame she had discuft,
 And meet respect of honour put to flight :
 So shamelesse beauty soone becomes a loathy fight.

Faire / Ladies, that to loue captiued arre,
 And chaste desires do nourish in your mind,
 Let not her fault your sweet affections marre, 440
 Ne blot the bounty of all womankind ;
 'Mongst thousands good one wanton Dame to find :
 Emongst the Roses grow some wicked weeds ;
 For this was not to loue, but lust inclin'd ;
 For loue does alwayes bring forth bounteous deeds,
 And in each gentle hart desire of honour breeds.

l. 421, 'ignorant' : l. 422, 'she' : l. 425, 'fyre' : l. 426, 'that' : l. 427, 'desyre' : l. 428, 'entyre' : l. 429, 'she,' and so l. 432 : l. 430, 'bruft' in 1609 : l. 436, 'honor putt' : l. 440, 'fivete' : l. 441, 'blott' : l. 445, 'alwaies' : l. 446, 'honor.'

Nought fo of loue this loofer Dame did skill,
 But as a coale to kindle fleshly flame,
 Giuing the bridle to her wanton will,
 And treading vnder foote her honeft name : 450
 Such loue is hate, and fuch defire is shame.
 Still did ſhe roue at her with crafty glaunce
 Of her falſe eyes, that at her hart did ayme,
 And told her meaning in her countenaunce ;
 But *Britomart* diffembled it with ignoraunce.

Supper was ſhortly dight and downe they fat,
 Where they were ſerued with all ſumptuous fare,
 Whiles fruitfull *Ceres*, and *Lyæus* fat
 Pourd out their plenty, without ſpight or ſpare :
 Nought wanted there, that dainty was and rare ;
 And aye the cups their bancks did ouerflow, 461
 And aye betweene the cups, ſhe did prepare
 Way to her loue, and ſecret darts did throw ;
 But *Britomart* would not ſuch guilfull meſſage
 know.

So when they flaked had the feruent heat
 Of appetite with meates of euery fort,
 The Lady did faire *Britomart* entreat,
 Her to difarme, and with delightfull ſport/
 To looſe her warlike limbs and ſtrong effort,
 But when ſhe mote not thereunto be wonne, 470
 (For ſhe her ſexe vnder that ſtraunge purport
 Did vſe to hide, and plaine apparaunce ſhonne :)
 In plainer wife to tell her grieuaunce ſhe begonne.

l. 448, 'cole' : l. 453, 'cies' : l. 456, 'fatt' : l. 458, 'fatt' : l. 473,
 'playner.'

And all attonce discouered her desire
 With fighes, and fobs, and plaints, & piteous grieffe,
 The outward sparkes of her in burning fire;
 Which spent in vaine, at last she told her brieffe,
 That but if she did lend her short reliefe,
 And do her comfort, she mote algates dye.
 But the chaste damzell, that had neuer priefe 480
 Of such malengine and fine forgerie,
 Did easly beleue her strong extremitie.

Full easie was for her to haue beliefe,
 Who by self-feeling of her feeble sexe,
 And by long triall of the inward grieffe,
 Wherewith imperious loue her hart did vexe,
 Could iudge what paines do louing harts perplexe.
 Who meanes no guile, beguiled sooneft shall,
 And to faire semblaunce doth light faith annexe;
 The bird, that knowes not the false fowlers call, 490
 Into his hidden net full easly doth fall.

For thy, she would not in discourteise wife,
 Scorne the faire offer of good will profest;
 For great rebuke it is, loue to despise,
 Or rudely sdeigne a gentle harts request;
 But with faire countenance, as befeemed best,
 Her entertaynd; nath'lesse she inly deemd
 Her loue too light, to wooe a wandering guest:
 Which she misconstruing, thereby esteemd
 That from like inward fire that outward smoke had
 steemd. 500

l. 479, 'doe,' and so l. 487: l. 481, 'forgerye': l. 482, 'easily . . .
 extremitie': l. 491, 'nett': l. 492, , inserted: l. 495, 'request' [sic].

Therewith / a while she her flit fancy fed,
 Till she mote winne fit time for her desire,
 But yet her wound still inward freshly bled,
 And through her bones the false instilled fire
 Did spread it selfe, and venime close inspire.
 Tho were the tables taken all away,
 And every knight, and every gentle Squire
 Gan choose his dame with *Bascimani* gay,
 With whom he meant to make his sport & courtly play.

Some fell to daunce, some fell to hazardry, 510
 Some to make loue, some to make meriment,
 As diuerse wits to diuers things apply;
 And all the while faire *Malecasta* bent
 Her crafty engins to her close intent.
 By this th'eternall lampes, wherewith high *Ioue*
 Doth light the lower world, were halfe yspent,
 And the moist daughters of huge *Atlas* stroue
 Into the *Ocean* deepe to driue their weary droue.

High time it seemed then for every wight
 Them to betake vnto their kindly rest; 520
 Eftsoones long waxen torches weren light,
 Vnto their bowres to guiden every guest:
 Tho when the Britonesse saw all the rest
 Auoided quite, she gan her selfe despoile,
 And safe commit to her soft fettered nest,
 Where through long watch, & late dayes weary toile,
 She soundly slept, & carefull thoughts did quite assoile.

l. 501, catch-word 'Therewith' for 'There' of '96: *ib.*, 'feed': l. 503, 'bledd': l. 508, 'Bascimano': l. 511, 'meryment': l. 512, 'diuerse' (2nd): l. 519, 'euerie': l. 522, 'guyden': l. 525, 'committ': l. 526, 'Wher . . . daies.'

Now whenas all the world in silence deepe
 Ythrowded was, and euery mortall wight
 Was drowned in the depth of deadly sleepe, 530
 Faire *Malecusta*, whose engrieued spright /
 Could find no rest in such perplexed plight,
 Lightly arose out of her wearie bed,
 And vnder the blacke vele of guilty Night,
 Her with a scarlot mantle couered,
 That was with gold and Ermines faire enueloped.

Then panting soft, and trembling euery ioynt,
 Her fearfull feete towards the bowre she moued ;
 Where she for secret purpose did appoynt
 To lodge the warlike mayd vnwisely loued, 540
 And to her bed approching, first she prooued,
 Whether she slept or wakt, with her soft hand
 She softly felt, if any member mooued,
 And lent her wary eare to vnderstand,
 If any puffe of breath, or figne of sence she fand.

Which whenas none she fond, with easie shift,
 For feare least her vnwares she should abrayd,
 Th'embroderd quilt she lightly vp did lift,
 And by her side her selfe she softly layd,
 Of euery finest fingers touch affrayd ; 550
 Ne any noise she made, ne word she spake,
 But inly figh'd. At last the royall Mayd
 Out of her quiet slomber did awake,
 And chaungd her weary side, the better ease to take.

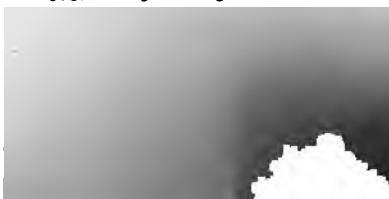
l. 535, '*scarlott*': l. 537, '*softe*': l. 538, '*mou'd*': l. 540, '*maide . . . loon'd*': l. 541, '*proou'd*': l. 542, '*wakte . . . softe*': l. 543, '*softely . . . moon'd*': l. 544, '*wary*'—accepted from 1609 for '*weary*' of '90 and '96: l. 545, '*shee*': *ib.*, '*fand*' accepted from 1609 for '*fond*' of '90 and '96: l. 546, '*easly shifte*': l. 548, '*liste*.'

Where feeling one close couched by her fide,
 She lightly lept out of her filed bed,
 And to her weapon ran, in minde to gride
 The loathed leachour. But the Dame halfe ded
 Through suddein feare and ghaftly drerihed,
 Did fhrieke alowd, that through the house it rong,
 And the whole family therewith adred, 561
 Rashly out of their rouzed couches sprong,
 And to the troubled chamber all in armes did throng.

And / those fix Knights that Ladies Champions,
 And eke the *Redcrosse* knight ran to the fownd,
 Halfe armd and halfe vnarmd, with them attons :
 Where when confusedly they came, they fownd
 Their Lady lying on the senceleffe grownd ;
 On th'other fide, they saw the warlike Mayd
 All in her snow-white smocke, with locks vnbownd,
 Threatning the point of her auenging blade, 571
 That with so troublous terrour they were all difmayde.

About their Lady first they flockt arownd,
 Whom hauing laid in comfortable couch,
 Shortly they reard out of her frosen fwownd ;
 And afterwards they gan with fowle reproch
 To stirre vp strife, and troublous contecke broch :
 But by enfample of the last dayes losse,
 None of them rashly durst to her approach,
 Ne in so glorious spoile themfelues embosse ; 580
 Her succourd eke the Champion of the bloody Crosse.

l. 556, 'bedd' : l. 558, 'dedd' : l. 559, 'drerihedd' : l. 560, 'hous' :
 l. 561, 'adredd' : l. 564, 'fixe . . . ladies' : l. 568, 'lady' : l. 571,
 'blaed' : l. 572, 'terror . . . difmayd' : l. 573, 'Ladye' : l. 580, 'for' :
 l. 581, 'bloody.'



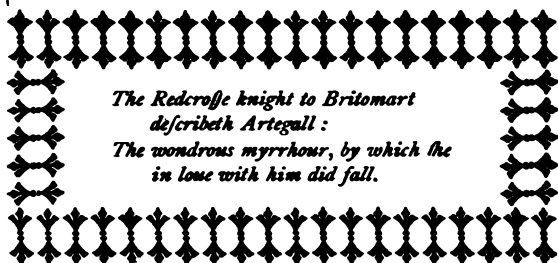
But one of those fixe knights, *Gardante* hight,
 Drew out a deadly bow and arrow keene,
 Which forth he sent with felonous despight,
 And fell intent against the virgin sheene :
 The mortall steele stayd not, till it was seene
 To gore her side, yet was the wound not deepe,
 But lightly rased her soft silken skin,
 That drops of purple bloud thereout did weepe,
 Which did her lilly smock with staines of vermeil steepe.

Wherewith enrag'd she fiercely at them flew, 591
 And with her flaming sword about her layd,
 That none of them foule mischief could eschew,
 But with her dreadfull strokes were all difmayd :/
 Here, there, and euery where about her swayd
 Her wrathfull steele, that none mote it abide ;
 And eke the *Redcrosse* knight gaue her good aid,
 Ay ioyning foot to foot, and side to side,
 That in short space their foes they haue quite terrifide.

Tho whenas all were put to shamefull flight, 600
 The noble *Britomartis* her arayd,
 And her bright armes about her body dight :
 For nothing would she lenger there be stayd,
 Where so loose life, and so vngentle trade
 Was vfd of Knights and Ladies seeming gent :
 So earely ere the grosse Earthes gryefy shade,
 Was all disperft out of the firmament,
 They tooke their steeds, & forth vpō their iourney went.

l. 589, 'blood': l. 590, 'steep': l. 596, 'abyde': l. 597, 'ayd': l. 598,
 'fyde' (bis): l. 599, 'terrifyde': l. 605, 'knyghes' [sic].

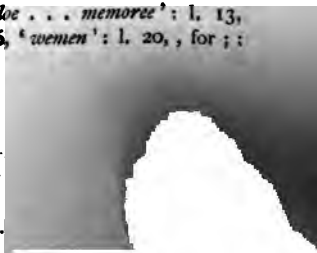
Cant. II.



Here haue I caufe, in men iust blame to find,
 That in their proper prayfe too partiall bee,
 And not indifferent to woman kind,
 To whom no fhare in armes and cheualrie
 They do impart, ne maken memorie 10
 Of their braue gестes and prowesse martiall ;
 Scarfe do they spare to one or two or three,
 Rowme in their writs ; yet the fame writing fmall
 Does all their deeds deface, and dims their glories all.

But / by record of antique times I find,
 That women wont in warres to beare moft fway,
 And to all great exploits them felues inclind :
 Of which they ftill the girlond bore away,
 Till enuious Men fearing their rules decay,
 Gan coyne freight lawes to curb their liberty ; 20
 Yet fith they warlike armes haue layd away :

l. 7, 'praise': l. 9, 'cheualrie': l. 10, 'doe . . . memorie': l. 13,
 'writtes': l. 14, 'deedes': l. 15, 'finde': l. 16, 'women': l. 20, , for ; ;
 l. 21, 'laide.'



They haue exceld in artes and pollicy,
That now we foolish men that prayse gin eke t'enuy.

Of warlike puiffaunce in ages spent,
Be thou faire *Britomart*, whose prayse I write,
But of all wisedome be thou precedent,
O foueraigne Queene, whose prayse I would endite,
Endite I would as dewtie doth excite ;
But ah my rimes too rude and rugged arre,
When in so high an obieſt they do lite, 30
And ſtriuing, fit to make, I feare do marre :
Thy ſelfe thy prayſes tell, and make them knowen farre.

She trauelling with *Guyon* by the way,
Of ſundry things faire purpoſe gan to find,
T'abridg their iourney long, and lingring day ;
Mongſt which it fell into that Faeries mind,
To aſke this Briton Mayd, what vncouth wind,
Brought her into thoſe parts, and what inqueſt
Made her diſſemble her diſguiſed kind :
Faire Lady ſhe him ſeemd, like Lady dreſt, 40
But faireſt knight aliue, when armed was her breſt.

Thereat ſhe ſighing ſoftly, had no powre
To ſpeake a while, ne ready anſwere make,
But with hart-thrilling throbs and bitter ſtowre,
As if ſhe had a feuer fit, did quake, /

l. 27, '*Soueraigne . . . endyte*': l. 28, '*excyte*': l. 29, '*rymes to*': l. 30, '*doe lyte*': l. 31, '*doe*': l. 33, '*trauelling*': *ib.*, Dr. Morris notes here '*She traueiling*' [a miſtake for '*trauelling*' in '96] (ſo all old editions), Upton propoſed to read '*the Redcroſſe knight*' inſtead of '*Guyon*.' Todd ſuggeſted '*Redcroſſe*,' and Drayton, according to Collier, propoſed '*S. George*.' See our Life of Spenser and Glossary s.v.: l. 34, '*fondry thinges*': l. 36, '*Fairies*': l. 37, '*Maid*': l. 38, '*partes*': l. 45, '*fill*.'

And euery daintie limbe with horroure shake ;
 And euer and anone the rosy red,
 Flashed through her face, as it had beene a flake
 Of lightning, through bright heauen fulmined ;
 At last the passion past she thus him answered. 50

Faire Sir, I let you weete, that from the howre
 I taken was from nourses tender pap,
 I haue beene trained vp in warlike stowre,
 To tossen speare and shield, and to affrap
 The warlike ryder to his most mishap ;
 Sithence I loathed haue my life to lead,
 As Ladies wont, in pleasures wanton lap,
 To finger the fine needle and nyce thread ;
 Me leuer were with point of foemans speare be dead.

All my delight on deedes of armes is fet, 60
 To hunt out perils and aduentures hard,
 By sea, by land, where so they may be met,
 Onely for honour and for high regard,
 Without respect of richesse or reward.
 For such intent into these parts I came,
 Withouten compasse, or withouten card,
 Far fro my natiue soyle, that is by name
 The greater *Britaine*, here to seeke for prayse and fame.

Fame blazed hath, that here in Faery lond
 Do many famous Knightes and Ladies wonne, 70
 And many straunge aduentures to be fond,
 Of which great worth and worship may be wonne ;

l. 49, 'heuen': l. 60, 'sett': l. 61, 'perilles': l. 62, 'melt': l. 65,
 'partes': l. 68, 'Brytane . . . praise': l. 70, 'Doe . . . knightes': l. 71,
 'bee.'

Which I to proue, this voyage haue begonne.
 But mote I weet of you, right curteous knight,
 Tydings of one, that hath vnto me donne
 Late foule dishonour and reprochfull spight,
 The which I seeke to wreake, and *Arthegall* he hight.

The / word gone out, she backe againe would call,
 As her repenting so to haue missayd,
 But that he it vp-taking ere the fall, 80
 Her shortly answered ; Faire martiall Mayd
 Certes ye misauised beene, t'vpbrayd
 A gentle knight with so vnknightly blame :
 For weet ye well of all, that euer playd
 At tilt or tourney, or like warlike game,
 The noble *Arthegall* hath euer borne the name.

For thy, great wonder were it, if such shame
 Should euer enter in his bounteous thought,
 Or euer do, that mote deferuen blame :
 The noble courage neuer weeneth ought, 90
 That may vnworthy of it selfe be thought.
 Therefore, faire Damzell, be ye well aware,
 Least that too farre ye haue your sorrow fought:
 You and your countrey both I wish welfare,
 And honour both ; for each of other worthy are.

The royall Mayd woxe inly wondrous glad,
 To heare her Loue so highly magnifide,

l. 73, 'I' before 'this' inadvertently in '90, instead of before 'to'—
 thus reading 'Which to proue I this voyage,' not as Dr. Morris inadvertently
 records: l. 74, 'courteous': l. 87, , added: l. 89, 'doe': l. 90, 'corage':
 l. 96, 'Maid': l. 97, 'magnifyde.'

And ioyd that euer she affixed had,
 Her hart on knight so goodly glorifide,
 How euer finely she it faind to hide : 100
 The louing mother, that nine monethes did beare,
 In the deare clofet of her painefull fide,
 Her tender babe, it seeing safe appeare,
 Doth not so much reioyce, as she reioycd theare.

But to occafion him to further talke,
 To feed her humour with his pleasing stile,
 Her lift in strifull termes with him to balke,
 And thus replide, How euer, Sir, ye file /
 Your curteous tongue, his prayfes to compile,
 It ill befeemes a knight of gentle fort, 110
 Such as ye haue him boasted, to beguile
 A simple mayd, and worke so haynous tort,
 In shame of knighthood, as I largely can report.

Let be therefore my vengeaunce to diffwade,
 And read, where I that faytour false may find.
 Ah, but if reason faire might you perfwade,
 To flake your wrath, and mollifie your mind,
 (Said he) perhaps ye should it better find :
 For hardy thing it is, to weene by might,
 That man to hard conditions to bind, 120
 Or euer hope to match in equall fight,
 Whose prowesse paragon saw neuer liuing wight.

l. 99, '*glorifyde*': l. 100, '*hyde*': l. 102, '*closett . . . fyde*': l. 106,
 '*humor . . . stile*': l. 107, '*stryfull*': l. 108, '*replyde . . . fyle*': l. 109,
 '*courteous . . . compyle*': l. 111, '*beguyle*': l. 112, '*maide . . .*
hainous': l. 114, '*bee*': l. 117, '*mollify*': l. 119, '*hardie*': l. 122,
 '*paragone*.'

Ne soothlich is it easie for to read,
 Where now on earth, or how he may be found ;
 For he ne wonneth in one certaine stead,
 But restlesse walketh all the world around,
 Ay doing things, that to his fame redound,
 Defending Ladies cause, and Orphans right,
 Where so he heares, that any doth confound
 Them comfortlesse, through tyranny or might : 130
 So is his foueraigne honour raifde to heauens hight.

His feeling words her feeble sence much pleased,
 And softly sunck into her molten hart ;
 Hart that is inly hurt, is greatly eased
 With hope of thing, that may allegge his smart ;
 For pleasing words are like to Magick art,
 That doth the charmed Snake in flomber lay :
 Such secrete ease felt gentle *Britomart*,
 Yet list the same efforce with faind gainesay ;
 So dischord oft in Musick makes the sweeter lay. 140

And / said, Sir knight, these idle termes forbear,
 And sith it is vneath to find his haunt,
 Tell me some markes, by which he may appeare,
 If chaunce I him encounter parauaunt ;
 For perdie one shall other slay, or daunt: (what sted.
 What shape, what shield, what armes, what steed,
 And what so else his person most may vaunt ?

l. 124, 'found,' and so all the rhyme-words in the stanza 'w' for 'u': l. 125, 'certeine': l. 127, 'thinges': l. 131, 'heuens': l. 132, 'wordes': l. 135, 'alledge' in 1679: l. 136, 'wordes': l. 138, 'secrete': l. 141, 'sayd . . . ydle': l. 142, 'finde': l. 145, 'perdy . . . fedd.'

All which the *Redcrosse* knight to point ared,
And him in euery part before her fashioned.

Yet him in euery part before she knew, 150
How euer list her now her knowledge faine,
Sith him whilome in *Britaine* she did vew,
To her reuealed in a mirrhour plaine,
Whereof did grow her first engrafted paine ;
Whose root and stalke so bitter yet did tast,
That but the fruit more sweetnesse did containe,
Her wretched dayes in dolour she mote wast,
And yield the pray of loue to lothsome death at last.

By strange occasion she did him behold,
And much more strangely gan to loue his sight, 160
As it in bookes hath written bene of old.
In *Deheubarth* that now South-wales is hight,
What time king *Ryence* raign'd, and dealed right,
The great Magitian *Merlin* had deuiz'd,
By his deepe science, and hell-dreaded might,
A looking glasse, right wondrously aguiz'd, (lemniz'd,
Whose vertues through the wyde world foone were fo-

It vertue had, to shew in perfect sight,
What euer thing was in the world contaynd,
Betwixt the lowest earth and heauens hight, 170
So that it to the looker appertaynd ;/

l. 148, '*ared*': l. 149, '*euerie*,' and so l. 150: l. 150, Dr. Morris notes here—"Mr. Collier says that Todd was a careless collator, yet Todd is right in saying that the folios read *point*, and Mr. Collier is wrong in asserting that they read *part*": l. 151, '*sayne*,' and so all the rhyme-words of the stanza '*y*' for '*i*': l. 152, '*whylome . . . Britayne*': l. 157, '*waste*': l. 160, '*straungely*': l. 161, '*beene*': l. 164, '*Magicien*': l. 167, '*worlde*': l. 170, '*heuens*:'.

What euer foe had wrought, or frend had faynd,
 Therein discouered was, ne ought mote pas,
 Ne ought in secret from the same remayned ;
 For thy, it round and hollow shaped was,
 Like to the world it selfe, and seem'd a world of glas.

Who wonders not, that reades so wonderous worke ?
 But who does wonder, that has red the Towre,
 Wherein th'Ægyptian *Phao* long did lurke
 From all mens vew, that none might her discoure, 180
 Yet she might all men vew out of her bowre ?
 Great *Ptolomæe* it for his lemans sake
 Ybuided all of glasse, by Magicke powre,
 And also it impregnable did make ;
 Yet when his loue was false, he with a peaze it brake.

Such was the glassie globe that *Merlin* made,
 And gaue vnto king *Ryence* for his gard,
 That neuer foes his kingdome might inuade,
 But he it knew at home before he hard
 Tydings thereof, and so them still debar'd. 190
 It was a famous Prefent for a Prince,
 And worthy worke of infinite reward,
 That treasons could bewray, and foes conuince ;
 Happie this Realme, had it remained euer since.

One day it fortun'd, faire *Britomart*
 Into her fathers clofet to repayre ;
 For nothing he from her referu'd apart,
 Being his onely daughter and his hayre ;
 Where when she had espyde that mirrhour fayre,

l. 186, 'glassy' : l. 194, 'Happy . . . remayned.

Her felfe a while therein ſhe vewd in vaine ; 200
 Tho her auizing of the vertues rare,
 Which thereof ſpoken were, ſhe gan againe
 Her to bethinke of, that mote to her felfe pertaine.

But / as it falleth, in the gentleſt harts
 Imperious Loue hath higheſt ſet his throne,
 And tyrannizeth in the bitter ſmarts
 Of them, that to him buxome are and prone :
 So thought this Mayd (as maydens uſe to done)
 Whom fortune for her huſband would allot,
 Not that ſhe luſted after any one ; 210
 For ſhe was pure from blame of ſinfull blot,
 Yet wiſt her life at laſt muſt lincke in that ſame knot.

Eftſoones there was preſented to her eye
 A comely knight, all arm'd in complet wize,
 Through whoſe bright ventayle lifted vp on hye
 His manly face, that did his foes agrize,
 And friends to termes of gentle truce entize,
 Lookt foorth, as *Phæbus* face out of the eaſt,
 Betwixt two ſhadie mountaines doth arize ;
 Portly his perſon was, and much increaſt 220
 Through his Heroicke grace, and honorable geſt.

His creſt was couered with a couchant Hound,
 And all his armour ſeem'd of antique mould,
 But wondrous maſſie and aſſured ſound,
 And round about yfretted all with gold,
 In which there written was with cyphers old.

l. 217, 'friends' : l. 219, 'ſhady mountaynes' : l. 222, 'H
 w in l. 224 : l. 224, 'maſſy.'

Achilles armes, which Arthegall did win.
 And on his shield enueloped feuenfold
 He bore a crowned litle Ermilin,
 That deckt the azure field with her faire pouldred skin.

The Damzell well did vew his personage, 231
 And liked well, ne further fastned not,
 But went her way ; ne her vnguilty age
 Did weene, vnwares, that her vnlucky lot
 Lay hidden in the bottome of the pot ;
 Of hurt vnwist most daunger doth redound :
 But the false Archer, which that arrow shot
 So flyly, that she did not feele the wound,
 Did smyle full smoothly at her weetleffe wofull found.

Thenceforth the feather in her loftie crest, 240
 Ruffed of loue, gan lowly to auaile,
 And her proud portance, and her princely gest,
 With which she earst tryumphed, now did quail
 Sad, solemne, fowre, and full of fancies fraile
 She woxe ; yet wist she neither how, nor why,
 She wist not, filly Mayd, what she did aile,
 Yet wist, she was not well at ease perdy,
 Yet thought it was not loue, but some melancholy.

So foone as Night had with her pallid hew
 Defast the beautie of the shining sky, 250
 And reft from men the worlds defired vew,
 She with her Nourse adowne to sleepe did lye ;
 But sleepe full farre away from her did fly :

l. 230, 'fayre' : l. 231, 'Personage' : l. 240, 'fether' : l. 242, 'proud
 portance' : l. 245, 'nether' : l. 250, 'shyning skye' : l. 251, 'worldes':
 l. 253, 'far.'

In stead there of sad fighes, and forrowes deepe
 Kept watch and ward about her warily,
 That nought she did but wayle, and often steepe
 He daintie couch with teares, which closely she did
 (weepe.

And if that any drop of slombring rest
 Did chaunce to still into her wearie fright,
 When feeble nature felt her selfe opprest, 260
 Streight way with dreames, and with fantasticke fight
 Of dreadfull things the same was put to flight,
 That oft out of her bed she did astart,
 As one with vew of ghastly seends affright :
 Tho gan she to renew her former smart,
 And thinke of that faire visage, written in her hart.

One / night, when she was tost with such vnrest,
 Her aged Nurse, whose name was *Glauce* hight,
 Feeling her leape out of her loathed nest,
 Betwixt her feeble armes her quickly keight, 270
 And downe againe in her warme bed her dight ;
 Ah my deare daughter, ah my dearest dread,
 What vncouth fit (said she) what euill plight
 Hath thee opprest, and with sad drearyhead
 Chaunged thy liuely cheare, and liuing made thee dead ?

For not of nought these suddeine ghastly feares
 All night afflict thy naturall repose,
 And all the day, when as thine equall peares,
 Their fit disports with faire delight doe chose,

l. 257, 'dainty': l. 259, 'weary': l. 266, 'fayre': l. 268, 'Nurse':
 l. 271, 'her' (2nd) dropped in '90: l. 273, 'fayd': l. 275, 'S': l. 276,
 'suddein.'

Thou in dull corners doest thy selfe inclose, 280
 Ne tastest Princes pleasures, ne doest spread
 Abroad thy fresh youthes fairest flowre, but lose
 Both leafe and fruit, both too vntimely shed,
 As one in wilfull bale for euer buried.

The time, that mortall men their weary cares
 Do lay away, and all wilde beastes do rest,
 And euery riuer eke his course forbeares
 Then doth this wicked euill thee infect,
 And riue with thousand throbs thy thrilled brest;
 Like an huge *Aetn'* of deepe engulfed grieve, 290
 Sorrow is heaped in thy hollow chest,
 Whence forth it breakes in sighes and anguish rise,
 As smoke and sulphure mingled with confused strife.

Aye me, how much I feare, least loue it bee;
 But if that loue it be, as sure I read
 By knowen signes and passions, which I see,
 Be it worthy of thy race and royall seed, /
 Then I auow by this most sacred head
 Of my deare foster child, to ease thy grieve,
 And win thy will: Therefore away doe dread; 300
 For death nor daunger from thy dew reliefe
 Shall me debarre, tell me therefore my liefest lief.

So hauing said, her twixt her armes twaine
 She straightly straynd, and colled tenderly,
 And euery trembling ioynt, and euery vaine
 She softly felt, and rubbed busily,

l. 282, '*youths fayrest*': l. 283, '*fruite*': l. 290, '*gryefe*': l. 292, '*ryfe*':
 l. 293, '*stryfe*': l. 294, '*Ay*': l. 303, '*sayd*': l. 304, '*Shce straightly*':
 l. 306, '*Shce*,' and so l. 309.

To doe the frosen cold away to fly ;
 And her faire deawy eies with kiffes deare
 She oft did bath, and oft againe did dry ;
 And euer her importund, not to feare 310
 To let the secreet of her hart to her appeare.

The Damzell pauzd, and then thus fearefully ;
 Ah Nurfe, what needeth thee to eke my paine ?
 Is not enough, that I alone doe dye,
 But it muft doubled be with death of twaine ?
 For nought for me but death there doth remaine.
 O daughter deare (faid she) despaire no whit ;
 For neuer fore, but might a falue obtaine :
 That blinded God, which hath ye blindly fmit,
 Another arrow hath your louers hart to hit. 320

But mine is not (quoth she) like others wound ;
 For which no reason can find remedy.
 Was neuer fuch, but mote the like be found,
 (Said she) and though no reason may apply
 Salue to your fore, yet loue can higher ftye,
 Then reasons reach, and oft hath wondrous donne.
 But neither God of loue, nor God of fky
 Can doe (faid she) that, which cannot be donne.
 Things oft impoffible (quoth she) feeme, ere begonne.

Thefe / idle words (faid she) doe nought affwage 330
 My ftubborne fmart, but more annoyance breed,
 For no no vfuall fire, no vfuall rage
 It is, ô Nurfe, which on my life doth feed,

l. 309, 'ofte . . . bathe . . . ofte': l. 315, 'bee': l. 317, 'despeire': l. 321,
 'wound,' and so w in l. 323: l. 327, 'fkye': l. 329, no, after 'seeme': l. 330,
 'wordes . . . affwage': l. 331, 'annoiaunce': l. 333, 'Yt . . . O Nurfe.'

And suckes the bloud, which from my hart doth bleed.
 But since thy faithfull zeale lets me not hyde
 My crime, (if crime it be) I will it reed.
 Nor Prince, nor pere it is, whose loue hath gryde
 My feeble breft of late, and launched this wound wyde.

Nor man it is, nor other liuing wight ;
 For then some hope I might vnto me draw, 340
 But th'only shade and semblant of a knight,
 Whose shape or person yet I neuer saw,
 Hath me subiected to loues cruell law :
 The same one day, as me misfortune led,
 I in my fathers wondrous mirrhour saw,
 And pleased with that seeming goodly-hed,
 Vnwares the hidden hooke with baite I swallowed.

Sithens it hath infixed faster hold
 Within my bleeding bowels, and so fore
 Now ranckleth in this same fraile fleshly mould, 350
 That all mine entrailes flow with poyfnous gore,
 And th'vicer groweth daily more and more ;
 Ne can my running fore find remedie,
 Other then my hard fortune to deplore,
 And languish as the leafe false from the tree,
 Till death make one end of my dayes and miserie.

Daughter (said she) what need ye be dismayd,
 Or why make ye such Monster of your mind ?
 Of much more vncouth thing I was affrayd ;
 Of filthy lust, contrarie vnto kind : / 360

l. 334, '*suckles* . . . *blood*': l. 335, '*zele*': l. 349, '*bowells*': l. 351, '*poyfnous*': l. 353, '*ronning* . . . *remedee*': l. 355, '*faine*': l. 356, '*daies* . . . *misericie*': l. 358, '*minde*,' and so each rhyme-word in the stanza '*e*': l. 360, '*contrary*.'

But this affection nothing straunge I find ;
 For who with reason can you aye reprove,
 To loue the semblant pleasing most your mind,
 And yield your heart, whence ye cannot remoue ?
 No guilt in you, but in the tyranny of loue.

Not so th'*Arabian Myrrhe* did fet her mind ;
 Nor so did *Biblis* spend her pining hart,
 But lou'd their natiue flesh against all kind,
 And to their purpose vsed wicked art :
 Yet playd *Pasiphaë* a more monstrous part, 370
 That lou'd a Bull, and learnd a beast to bee ;
 Such shamefull lusts who loaths not, which depart
 From course of nature and of modestie ?
 Sweet loue such lewdnes bands from his faire companie.

But thine my Deare (welfare thy heart my deare)
 Though strange beginning had, yet fixed is
 On one, that worthy may perhaps appeare ;
 And certes seemes bestowed not amis :
 Ioy thereof haue thou and eternall blis.
 With that vpleaning on her elbow weake, 380
 Her alablastre brest she soft did kis,
 Which all that while she felt to pant and quake,
 As it an Earth-quake were ; at last she thus bespake.

Beldame, your words doe worke me litle ease ;
 For though my loue be not so lewdly bent,

l. 363, '*semblaunt*': l. 366, '*sett . . . mynd*,' and so all the rhyme-words in the stanza '*y*' for '*i*': l. 367, '*Nor*'—misprinted '*Not*' in '90 and '96, but corrected in '*Faults escaped*' of the former: l. 371, '*Bul*': l. 373, '*modestee*': l. 374, '*sweete . . . cōpanee*': l. 376, '*straunge*': l. 381, '*alablastre*' misprinted '*alablasted*' in '96: l. 382, '*shee*.'

As those ye blame, yet may it nought appease
 My raging smart, ne ought my flame relent,
 But rather doth my helpelesse grieve augment.
 For they, how euer shamefull and vnkind,
 Yet did possesse their horrible intent : 390
 Short end of sorrowes they thereby did find ;
 So was their fortune good, though wicked were their
 mind.

But / wicked fortune mine, though mind be good,
 Can haue no end, nor hope of my desire,
 But feed on shadowes, whiles I die for food,
 And like a shadow wexe, whiles with entire
 Affection, I doe languish and expire.
 I fonder, then *Cephus* foolish child,
 Who hauing vewed in a fountaine there
 His face, was with the loue thereof beguild ; 400
 I fonder loue a shade, the bodie farre exild.

Nought like (quoth she) for that same wretched boy
 Was of himselfe the idle Paramoure ;
 Both loue and louer, without hope of ioy,
 For which he faded to a watry flowre.
 But better fortune thine, and better howre,
 Which lou'ft the shadow of a warlike knight ;
 No shadow, but a bodie hath in powre :
 That bodie, wherefoeuer that it light,
 May learned be by cyphers, or by Magicke might. 410

l. 389, 'vnkinde': l. 391, 'therby . . . finde': l. 392, 'minde': l. 393, 'minde,' and in 1609 'mine': l. 398, 'chylde,' and so ll. 400-1 'y' for 'i': l. 401, 'body far': l. 402, 'shee': l. 403, 'him selfe . . . ydle': l. 408, 'body,' and so l. 409.

But if thou may with reason yet repress
 The growing euill, ere it strength haue got,
 And thee abandond wholly doe possesse,
 Against it strongly striue, and yield thee not,
 Till thou in open field adowne be smot.
 But if the passion mayster thy fraile might,
 So that needs loue or death must be thy lot,
 Then I auow to thee, by wrong or right
 To compasse thy desire, and find that loued knight.

Her chearefull words much cheard the feeble spright
 Of the sicke virgin, that her downe she layd 421
 In her warme bed to sleepe, if that she might ;
 And the old-woman carefully displayd /
 The clothes about her round with busie ayd ;
 So that at last a little creeping sleepe
 Surprisd her sence : She therewith well apayd,
 The drunken lampe downe in the oyle did steepe,
 And set her by to watch, and set her by to weepe.

Earely the morrow next, before that day
 His ioyous face did to the world reueale, 430
 They both vprose and tooke their readie way
 Vnto the Church, their prayers to appeale,
 With great deuotion, and with litle zeale :
 For the faire Damzell from the holy herse
 Her loue-sicke hart to other thoughts did steale ;
 And that old Dame said many an idle verse,
 Out of her daughters hart fond fancies to reuerse.

l. 412, 'gott,' and so all the rhyme-words of the stanza, double *t* :
 l. 413, 'wholy' : l. 415, 'adowne' : l. 417, 'bee' : l. 424, 'busy' :
 l. 425, 'litle' : l. 426, 'fence : Shee' : l. 427, 'dronken lamp down . . .
 oyl' : l. 428, 'sett' (bis) : l. 430, 'reuele' : l. 431, 'ready' : l. 432, 'praiers
 . . . appele' : l. 433, 'zele.'

Returned home, the royall Infant fell
 Into her former fit ; for why, no powre
 Nor guidance of her selfe in her did dwell. 440
 But th'aged Nurfe her calling to her bowre,
 Hath gathered Rew, and Sauine, and the flowre
 Of *Camphara*, and Calamint, and Dill,
 All which she in an earthen Pot did poure,
 And to the brim with Colt wood did it fill,
 And many drops of milke and bloud through it did spill.

Then taking thrife three haire from off her head,
 Them trebly breaded in a threefold lace,
 And round about the pots mouth, bound the thread,
 And after hauing whispered a space 450
 Certaine sad words, with hollow voice and bace,
 She to the virgin said, thrife said she it ;
 Come daughter come, come ; spit vpon my face,
 Spit thrife vpon me, thrife vpon me spit ;
 Th'vneuen number for this businesse is most fit.

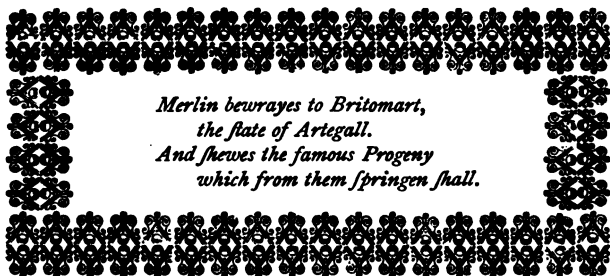
That / sayd, her round about she from her turnd,
 She turned her contrarie to the Sunne,
 Thrife she her turnd contrary, and returnd,
 All contrary, for she the right did shunne,
 And euer what she did, was streight vndonne. 460
 So thought she to vndoe her daughters loue :
 But loue, that is in gentle brest begonne,

l. 439, 'fitt,' and no, after 'why': l. 440, 'guidaunce': l. 441, 'Nourse':
 l. 446, 'milk . . . blood': l. 447, 'heares . . . of': l. 448, 'Then' in '90,
 but corrected in 'Faults escaped': *ib.*, 'braided' in 1609: l. 449, 'Pots
 . . . boud': l. 451, 'Certein': l. 452, 'shee . . . sayd' (*bis*) 'itt': l. 454,
 'spitt' (*bis*): l. 455, 'number . . . busines . . . fitt': l. 456, 'round':
 l. 457, 'contrary.'

No idle charmes so lightly may remoue,
That well can witnesse, who by triall it does proue.

Ne ought it mote the noble Mayd auayle,
Ne slake the furie of her cruell flame,
But that she still did waste, and still did wayle,
That through long langour, and hart-burning brame
She shortly like a pyned ghost became,
Which long hath waited by the Stygian frond. 470
That when old *Glauce* saw, for feare least blame
Of her miscarriage should in her be fond,
She wist not how t'amend, nor how it to withstond.

Cant. III.



Moft sacred fire, that burnest mightily
In liuing brefts, ykindled first aboue,
Emongst th'eternall spheres and lamping sky,
And thence pourd into men, which men call Loue ; /

l. 463, 'ydle' : l. 464, 'tryall' : l. 466, 'fury' : l. 468, 'laugour' in '96 : *ib.*, 'e'.

l. 3, 'Arthegall' : l. 4, 'shews' : l. 6, 'Ok' for 'Mof' of '90 and '96 in 1609 : *ib.*, 'fyre.'

Not that fame, which doth base affections moue 10
 In brutish minds, and filthy lust inflame,
 But that sweet fit, that doth true beautie loue,
 And chofeth vertue for his dearest Dame,
 Whence spring all noble deeds and neuer dying fame :

Well did Antiquitie a God thee deeme,
 That ouer mortall minds haft so great might,
 To order them, as best to thee doth seeme,
 And all their actions to direct aright ;
 The fatal purpose of diuine foresight,
 Thou doest effect in destined descents, 20
 Through deepe impression of thy secret might,
 And stirredst vp th'Heroes high intents,
 Which the late world admyres for wondrous monimèts.

But thy dread darts in none doe triumph more,
 Ne brauer prooue in any, of thy powre
 Shew'dst thou, then in this royall Maid of yore,
 Making her seeke an vnknowne Paramoure,
 From the worlds end, through many a bitter stowre :
 From whose two loynes thou afterwards did rayse
 Most famous fruits of matrimoniall bowre, 30
 Which through the earth haue spread their liuing prayse,
 That fame in trompe of gold eternally displays.

Begin then, ô my dearest sacred Dame,
 Daughter of *Phæbus* and of *Memorie*,

l. 10, catch-word '*Nor*' not in '96 : l. 11, '*mindes*' : l. 12, '*fwede*' :
 l. 14, '*deedes*' : l. 15, '*Antiquity*' : l. 16, '*mindes*' : l. 23, '*wōdrous*' : l. 24,
 '*dredd dartes*' : l. 29, '*afterwardes*' : l. 30, '*fruites*' : l. 31, '*spread*' : l. 32,
 '*tromp*' : l. 33, '*O*,' and so l. 38 : l. 34, '*Memorye*.'

That doest ennoble with immortall name
 The warlike Worthies, from antiquitie,
 In thy great volume of Eternitie :
 Begin, ô *Clio*, and recount from hence
 My glorious Soueraines goodly auncestie,
 Till that by dew degrees and long pretence, 40
 Thou haue it lastly brought vnto her Excellence.

Full / many wayes within her troubled mind,
 Old *Glauce* cast, to cure this Ladies grieve :
 Full many waies she fought, but none could find,
 Nor herbes, nor charmes, nor counsell, that is chiefe
 And choifest med'cine for ficke harts reliefe :
 For thy great care she tooke, and greater feare,
 Least that it should her turne to foule reprieve,
 And fore reproch, when so her father deare
 Should of his dearest daughters hard misfortune heare.

At last she her auifd, that he, which made 51
 That mirrhour, wherein the ficke Damofell
 So straungely vewed her straunge louers shade,
 To weet, the learned *Merlin*, well could tell,
 Vnder what coast of heauen the man did dwell,
 And by what meanes his loue might best be wrought :
 For though beyond the *Africk Ismaell*,
 Or th'Indian *Peru* he were, she thought
 Him forth through infinite endeouour to haue fought.

Forthwith themfelues disguifing both in straunge 60
 And base attyre, that none might them bewray,

l. 36, '*antiquitye*,' and so 'y' for 'i' in all the rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 40, '*pretence*' : l. 45, '*counsel*' : l. 46, '*sicke*' : l. 48, '*fowle*' : l. 51, '*auifde*' : l. 60, '*them felues*.'

To *Maridunum*, that is now by chaunge
 Of name *Cayr-Merdin* cald, they tooke their way:
 There the wife *Merlin* whylome wont (they say)
 To make his wonne, low vnderneath the ground,
 In a deepe delue, farre from the vew of day,
 That of no liuing wight he mote be found,
 When so he counfeld with his sprights encōpaft round.

And if thou euer happen that same way
 To trauell, goe to see that dreadfull place: 70
 It is an hideous hollow caue (they say)
 Vnder a rocke that lyes a litle space /
 From the swift *Barry*, tombling downe apace,
 Emongst the woodie hilles of *Dyneuowre*:
 But dare thou not, I charge, in any cace,
 To enter into that fame balefull Bowre,
 For fear the cruell Feends should thee vnwares deuowre.

But standing high aloft, low lay thine eare,
 And there such ghaftly noife of yron chaines,
 And brafen Caudrons thou shalt rombling heare, 80
 Which thousand sprights with long enduring paines
 Doe toffe, that it will stonne thy feeble braines,
 And oftentimes great grones, and grievous stounds,
 When too huge toile and labour them constraines:
 And oftentimes loud strokes, and ringing founds
 From vnder that deepe Rocke most horribly rebounds.

The caufe some fay is this: A litle while
 Before that *Merlin* dyde, he did intend,

l. 68, 'cōsfeld': l. 70, 'trauail, go': l. 72, 'Rock': l. 74, 'woody':
 l. 77, 'Feendes': l. 79, 'noyfe': l. 82, 'stoun': l. 83, ' & . . . stounds':
 l. 85, 'fowndes': l. 86, 'Rock . . . rebounds': l. 87, 'whyle,' and all
 rhyme-words of the stanza 'y' for 'i.'

A brafen wall in compas to compile
 About *Cairmardin*, and did it commend 90
 Vnto these Sprights, to bring to perfect end.
 During which worke the Ladie of the Lake,
 Whom long he lou'd, for him in haft did fend,
 Who thereby forst his workemen to forsake,
 Them bound till his returne, their labour not to flake.

In the meane time through that false Ladies traine,
 He was surprisd, and buried vnder beare,
 Ne euer to his worke returnd againe :
 Nath'lesse those feends may not their worke forbear,
 So greatly his commaundement they feare, 100
 But there doe toyle and trauell day and night,
 Vntill that brafen wall they vp doe reare :
 For *Merlin* had in Magicke more insight,
 Than euer him before or after liuing wight.

For / he by words could call out of the sky
 Both Sunne and Moone, and make them him obey :
 The land to sea, and sea to maineland dry,
 And darkefome night he eke could turne to day :
 Huge hostes of men he could alone dismay,
 And hostes of men of meanest things could frame, 110
 When so him list his enemies to fray :
 That to this day for terror of his fame,
 The feends do quake, when any him to them does name.

And sooth, men say that he was not the sonne
 Of mortall Syre, or other liuing wight,

l. 95, 'bound . . . retourne': l. 101, 'traucile': l. 105, 'wordes': l. 107,
 'Land': l. 108, 'darkfom': l. 110, 'thinges': l. 113, 'whē.'

But wondrously begotten, and begonne
 By false illusion of a guilefull Spright,
 On a faire Ladie Nonne, that whilome hight
Matilda, daughter to *Pubidius*,
 Who was the Lord of *Mathrauell* by right, 120
 And coosen vnto king *Ambrosius* :
 Whence he indued was with skill so maruellous.

They here ariuing, staid a while without,
 Ne durst aduenture rashly in to wend,
 But of their first intent gan make new dout
 For dread of daunger, which it might portend :
 Vntill the hardie Mayd (with loue to frend)
 First entering, the dreadfull Mage there found
 Deepe busied bout worke of wondrous end,
 And writing strange characters in the ground, 130
 With which the stubborn seends he to his seruice bound.

He nought was moued at their entrance bold :
 For of their comming well he wist afore,
 Yet list them bid their businesse to vnfold,
 As if ought in this world in secret store /
 Were from him hidden, or vnknowne of yore.
 Then *Glauce* thus, let not it thee offend,
 That we thus rashly through thy darkefome dore,
 Vnwares haue preft : for either fatall end,
 Or other mightie cause vs two did hither fend. 140

He bad tell on ; And then she thus began.

Now haue three Moones with borrow'd brothers light,

l. 118, '*Lady*' : l. 120, '*Mathrauell*' : l. 122, '*mercifulous*' : l. 127, '*hardy*' : l. 128, '*fownd*,' and so '*w*' in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 131, '*stubborne seendes*' : l. 132, '*entraunce*' : l. 135, '*secrete*' : catch-word '*Were*' not in '96 : l. 138, '*darkfom*' : l. 140, '*hether*' : l. 142, '*borrowd*.'

Thrice shined faire, and thrice seem'd dim and wan,
 Sith a fore euill, which this virgin bright
 Tormenteth, and doth plunge in dolefull plight,
 First rooting tooke; but what thing it mote bee,
 Or whence it sprong, I cannot read aright:
 But this I read, that but if remedee,
 Thou her afford, full shortly I her dead shall see.

Therewith th'Enchaunter softly gan to smyle 150
 At her smooth speeches, weeting inly well,
 That she to him dissembled womanish guyle,
 And to her said, Beldame, by that ye tell,
 More need of leach-craft hath your Damozell,
 Then of my skill: who helpe may haue elsewhere,
 In vaine seekes wonders out of Magicke spell.
 Th'old woman wox half blanck, those words to heare;
 And yet was loth to let her purpose plaine appeare.

And to him said, If any leaches skill,
 Or other learned meanes could haue redrest 160
 This my deare daughters deepe engrafted ill,
 Certes I should be loth thee to molest:
 But this sad euill, which doth her infest,
 Doth course of naturall cause farre exceed,
 And housed is within her hollow brest,
 That either seemes some curfed witches deed,
 Or euill spright, that in her doth such torment breed.

The / wifard could no lenger beare her bord,
 But brusting forth in laughter, to her sayd;

L. 143, '*seemd*': L. 154, '*crafts*': L. 157, '*womd*': L. 159, '*ly*'



Glauce, what needs this colourable word, 170
 To cloke the cause, that hath it selfe bewrayd ?
 Ne ye faire *Britomartis*, thus arayd,
 More hidden are, then Sunne in cloudy vele ;
 Whom thy good fortune, hauing fate obayd,
 Hath hither brought, for succour to appele ;
 The which the powres to thee are pleased to reuele.

The doubtfull Mayd, seeing her selfe descryde,
 Was all abasht, and her pure yuory
 Into a cleare Carnation suddeine dyde ;
 As faire *Aurora* rising hastily, 180
 Doth by her blushing tell, that she did lye
 All night in old *Tithonus* frosen bed,
 Whereof she seemes ashamed inwardly.
 But her old Nourse was nought dishartened,
 But vantage made of that, which *Merlin* had ared.

And sayd, Sith then thou knowest all our grieve,
 (For what doest not thou know ?) of grace I pray,
 Pitty our plaint, and yield vs meet reliefe.
 With that the Prophet still awhile did stay,
 And then his spirite thus gan forth display ; 190
 Most noble Virgin, that by fatall lore
 Hast learn'd to loue, let no whit thee dismay
 The hard begin, that meets thee in the dore,
 And with sharpe fits thy tender hart oppresseth fore.

For so must all things excellent begin,
 And eke enrooted deepe must be that Tree,

l. 170, 'needs': l. 172, 'fayre,' and so l. 180: l. 175, 'hether': l. 184,
 'olde': l. 188, 'playnt': l. 190, 'foorth': l. 193, 'beginne . . . meetes.'

Whose big embodied braunches shall not lin,
 Till they to heauens hight forth stretched bee. /
 For from thy wombe a famous Progenie
 Shall spring, out of the auncient *Troian* blood, 200
 Which shall reuiue the sleeping memorie
 Of those fame antique Peres, the heauens brood,
 Which *Greece* and *Asian* riuers stained with their blood.

Renowned kings, and sacred Emperours,
 Thy fruitfull Offspring, shall from thee descend ;
 Braue Captaines, and most mighty warriors,
 That shall their conquests through all lands extend,
 And their decayed kingdomes shall amend :
 The feeble Britons, broken with long warre,
 They shall vpreare, and mightily defend 210
 Against their forrein foe, that comes from farre,
 Till vniuerfall peace compound all ciuill iarre.

It was not, *Britomart*, thy wandering eye,
 Glauncing vnwares in charmed looking glas,
 But the streight course of heauenly destiny,
 Led with eternall prouidence, that has
 Guided thy glaunce, to bring his will to pas :
 Ne is thy fate, ne is thy fortune ill,
 To loue the prowest knight, that euer was.
 Therefore submit thy wayes vnto his will, 220
 And do by all dew meanes thy destiny fulfill.

But read (said *Glauce*) thou Magitian

What meanes shall she out seeke, or what wayes take?

l. 198, '*heuens*,' catch-word 'For' not in '96: l. 199, '*Progenie*': l. 201, '*memores*': l. 202, '*heuens*': l. 203, '& . . . *slayned*': l. 208, '*shall*' in 1679 is emended '*all*': l. 211, '*forren*': l. 217, '*Guyded*': l. 221, '*doe*': l. 223, '*wayes*.'

How shall she know, how shall she find the man?
 Or what needs her to toyle, fith fates can make
 Way for themselues, their purpose to partake?
 Then *Merlin* thus; Indeed the fates are firme,
 And may not shrinck, though all the world do shake:
 Yet ought mens good endeouours them confirme,
 And guide the heauenly causes to their constant terme.

The / man whom heauens haue ordaynd to bee 231
 The spouse of *Britomart*, is *Arthegall*:
 He wonneth in the land of *Fayerree*,
 Yet is no *Fary* borne, ne fib at all
 To Elfes, but sprong of seed terrestriall,
 And whilome by false *Faries* stolne away,
 Whiles yet in infant cradle he did crall;
 Ne other to himselfe is knowne this day,
 But that he by an Elfe was gotten of a *Fay*.

But sooth he is the sonne of *Gorlois*, 240
 And brother vnto *Cador* Cornish king,
 And for his warlike feates renowned is,
 From where the day out of the sea doth spring,
 Vntill the closure of the Euening.
 From thence, him firmly bound with faithfull band,
 To this his natiue soyle thou backe shalt bring,
 Strongly to aide his countrey, to withstand
 The powre of forrein Paynims, which inuade thy land.

Great aid thereto his mighty puissaunce,
 And dreaded name shall giue in that sad day: 250

l. 224, 'finde': l. 225, 'needes': l. 226, 'partake': l. 227, 'thus,' for;
ib., 'Indeede': l. 230, 'guyde': l. 236, 'whylome': l. 237, 'Whyles': l. 247,
 'ayde': l. 248, 'forreine': l. 249, 'ayd.'

Where also prooue of thy prow valiaunce
 Thou then shalt make, t'increase thy louers pray.
 Long time ye both in armes shall beare great sway,
 Till thy wombes burden thee from them do call,
 And his last fate him from thee take away,
 Too rathe cut off by practife criminall
 Of secreet foes, that him shall make in mischief fall.

Where thee yet shall he leaue for memory
 Of his late puissaunce, his Image dead,
 That liuing him in all actiuitie 260
 To thee shall represent. He from the head /
 Of his coofin *Constantius* without dread
 Shall take the crowne, that was his fathers right,
 And therewith crowne himselfe in th'others stead :
 Then shall he issue forth with dreadfull might,
 Against his Saxon foes in bloudy field to fight.

Like as a Lyon, that in drowfie caue
 Hath long time slept, himselfe so shall he shake,
 And comming forth, shall spread his banner braue
 Ouer the troubled South, that it shall make 270
 The warlike *Mertians* for feare to quake :
 Thrife shall he fight with them, and twise shall win,
 But the third time shall faire accordaunce make :
 And if he then with victorie can lin,
 He shall his dayes with peace bring to his earthly In.

His sonne, hight *Vortipore*, shall him succede
 In kingdome, but not in felicity ;

l. 257, 'secrete': l. 258, 'With': l. 259, 'ymage': catch-word 'Of' not in '96: l. 262, 'coofen': l. 266, 'bloody': l. 273, 'fayre.'

Yet shall he long time warre with happy speed,
 And with great honour many battels try :
 But at the last to th'importunity 280
 Of froward fortune shall be forst to yield.
 But his sonne *Malgo* shall full mightily
 Auenge his fathers losse, with speare and shield,
 And his proud foes discomfit in victorious field.

Behold the man, and tell me *Britomart*,
 If ay more goodly creature thou didst see ;
 How like a Gyaunt in each manly part
 Beares he himselfe with portly maiestee,
 That one of th'old *Heroes* seemes to bee :
 He the six Islands, comprouinciall 290
 In auncient times vnto great Britainee,
 Shall to the fame reduce, and to him call
 Their sundry kings to do their homage seuerall.

All / which his sonne *Careticus* awhile
 Shall well defend, and *Saxons* powre suppressse,
 Vntill a straunger king from vnknowne soyle
 Arriuing, him with multitude oppresse ;
 Great *Gormond*, hauing with huge mightinesse
 Ireland subdewd, and therein fixt his throne,
 Like a swift Otter, fell through emptinesse, 300
 Shall ouerswim the sea with many one
 Of his Norueyfes, to assist the Britons sone.

He in his furie all shall ouerrunne,
 And holy Church with faithlesse hands deface,
 That thy sad people vtterly fordonne,
 Shall to the vtmost mountaines fly apace :

l. 279, 'batteils' : l. 293, 'fondry . . . doe' : l. 296, 'vknowne'—mis-
 printed 'vknorone' in '96 : l. 303, 'ouerronne' : l. 304, 'handes.'

Was neuer fo great waft in any place,
 Nor fo fowle outrage doen by liuing men :
 For all thy Cities they fhall facke and race,
 And the greene graffe, that groweth, they fhall bren
 That euen the wild beaft fhall dy in ftarued den. 311

Whiles thus the Britons do in languour pine,
 Proud *Etheldred* fhall from the North arife,
 Seruing th'ambitious will of *Auguftine*,
 And paffing *Dee* with hardy enterprife,
 Shall backe repulfe the valiaunt *Brockwell* twife,
 And *Bangor* with maffacred Martyrs fill :
 But the third time fhall rew his foolhardife :
 For *Cadwan* pittying his peoples ill,
 Shall stoutly him defeat, and thoufand Saxons kill. 320

But after him, *Cadwallin* mightily
 On his fonne *Edwin* all thofe wrongs fhall wreake ;
 Ne fhall auaille the wicked forcery
 Of falfe *Pellite*, his purpofes to breake, /
 But him fhall flay, and on a gallowes bleake
 Shall giue th'enchauter his vnhappy hire :
 Then fhall the Britons, late difmayd and weake,
 From their long vaffalage gin to refpire,
 And on their Paynim foes auenge their ranckled ire.

Ne fhall he yet his wrath fo mitigate, 330
 Till both the fonnes of *Edwin* he haue flaine,

l. 307, 'waſte' : l. 308, 'outrage'—misprinted 'aufrage' in '96 : l. 309, 'Citties' : l. 311, 'wilde' : l. 312, 'thy' : *ib.*, 'doe' : catchword 'But' not in '96 : l. 325, 'bleak' : l. 326, : added : l. 331, 'flayne,' and ſo 'y' for 'i' in all the rhyme-words of the stanza.

Offricke and *Ofricke*, twinnes vnfortunate,
 Both slaine in battell vpon Layburne plaine,
 Together with the king of *Louthiane*,
 Hight *Adin*, and the king of *Orkeny*,
 Both ioynt partakers of the fatall paine :
 But *Penda*, fearefull of like desteny,
 Shall yield him selfe his liegeman, and sweare fealty.

Him shall he make his fatall Instrumēt,
 T'afflict the other *Saxons* vnsubdewd ; 340
 He marching forth with fury insolent
 Against the good king good *Oswald*, who indewd
 With heauenly powre, and by Angels reskewd,
 All holding crosses in their hands on hye,
 Shall him defeate withouten blood imbrewd :
 Of which, that field for endlesse memory,
 Shall *Heuenfield* be cald to all posterity.

Where at *Cadwallin* wroth, shall forth isswe,
 And an huge hoste into Northumber lead,
 With which he godly *Oswald* shall subdew, 350
 And crowne with martyrdome his sacred head.
 Whose brother *Oswin*, daunted with like dread,
 With price of siluer shall his kingdome buy,
 And *Penda*, seeking him adowne to tread,
 Shall tread adowne, and do him fowly dye,
 But shall with gifts his Lord *Cadwallin* pacify.

Then / shall *Cadwallin* dye, and then the raine
 Of *Britons* eke with him attonce shall dye ;

l. 333, 'battaile': l. 336, 'their': l. 345, 'blood': l. 355, 'doe': l. 356,
 'guifts' [sic]: l. 357, 'die.'

Ne shall the good *Cadwallader* with paine,
 Or powre, be hable it to remedy, 360
 When the full time prefixt by destiny,
 Shalbe expird of *Britons* regiment.
 For heauen it selfe shall their succeffe enuy,
 And them with plagues and murrins pestilent
 Consume, till all their warlike puiffaunce be spent.

Yet after all these sorrowes, and huge hills
 Of dying people, during eight yeares space,
Cadwallader not yielding to his ills,
 From *Armoricke*, where long in wretched cace
 He liu'd, returning to his natie place, 370
 Shalbe by vision staid from his intent :
 For th'heauens haue decreed, to displace
 The *Britons*, for their finnes dew punishment,
 And to the *Saxons* ouer-giue their gouernment.

Then woe, and woe, and euerlasting woe,
 Be to the Briton babe, that shalbe borne,
 To liue in thraldome of his fathers foe ;
 Late King, now captiue, late Lord, now forlorne,
 The worlds reproch, the cruell victours scorne,
 Banisht from Princely bowre to wastfull wood : 380
 O who shall helpe me to lament, and mourne
 The royall feed, the antique *Troian* blood,
 Whose Empire lenger here, then euer any stood.

The Damzell was full deepe empaffioned,
 Both for his grieve, and for her peoples sake,

l. 363, 'heuen': l. 371, 'staide': l. 378, 'king . . . lord': l. 379, 'victors': l. 380, 'prinselfe . . . wastefull': l. 383, 'empire.'

Whose future woes so plaine he fashioned,
 And sighing fore, at length him thus bespake ;/
 Ah but will heauens fury neuer flake,
 Nor vengeance huge relent it selfe at last ?
 Will not long misery late mercy make, 390
 But shall their name for euer be defast,
 And quite from of th'earth their memory be raft ?

Nay but the terme (said he) is limited,
 That in this thrالدome *Britons* shall abide,
 And the iust reuolution measured,
 That they as Straungers shalbe notifide.
 For twise foure hundreth yeares shalbe supplide,
 Ere they to former rule restor'd shalbee,
 And their importune fates all satisfide : 399
 Yet during this their most obfcuritee, (may see.
 Their beames shall oft breake forth, that men them faire

For *Rhodoricke*, whose surname shalbe Great,
 Shall of him selfe a braue ensample shew,
 That Saxon kings his friendship shall intreat ;
 And *Howell Dha* shall goodly well indew
 The saluage minds with skill of iust and trew ;
 Then *Griffyth Conan* also shall vp reare
 His dreaded head, and the old sparkes renew
 Of natue courage, that his foes shall feare, (beare.
 Least backe againe the kingdome he from them should

Catch-word 'Ah' not in '96: l. 388, 'heuens': l. 391, 'defaste': l. 392, 'of' (= off) dropped both in '90 and '96, but corrected in 'Faults escaped' of the former: *ib.*, 'raffe': l. 393, 'sayd': l. 397, 'foure': *ib.*, 'yeares' dropped in '96 by error; and 1609 instead of recurring to '90 supplies 'full' to complete the line. See our Life of Spenser in Vol. I.: l. 398, 'unto their' [*sic*]: l. 401, 'oftē . . . thē': l. 409, 'corage.'

Ne shall the Saxons selues all peaceably 411
 Enioy the crowne, which they from Britons wonne
 First ill, and after ruled wickedly :
 For ere two hundred yeares be full outronne,
 There shall a Rauen far from rising Sunne,
 With his wide wings vpon them fiercely fly,
 And bid his faithlesse chickens ouerronne
 The fruitfull plaines, and with fell cruelty,
 In their auenge, tread downe the victours surquedry.

Yet / shall a third both these, and thine subdew ; 420
 There shall a Lyon from the sea-bord wood
 Of *Neustria* come roring, with a crew
 Of hungry whelpes, his battailous bold brood,
 Whose clawes were newly dipt in cruddy blood,
 That from the Daniske Tyrants head shall rend
 Th'vsurped crowne, as if that he were wood,
 And the spoile of the countrey conquered
 Emongst his young ones shall diuide with bountyhed.

Tho when the terme is full accomplishid,
 There shall a sparke of fire, which hath long-while
 Bene in his ashes raked vp, and hid, 431
 Be freshly kindled in the fruitfull Ile
 Of *Mona*, where it lurked in exile ;
 Which shall breake forth into bright burning flame,
 And reach into the house, that beares the stile
 Of royall maiesty and foueraigne name ;
 So shall the Briton bloud their crowne againe reclame.

l. 414, 'outronne'—misprinted in '96 'ouerronne': l. 417, 'ouerronne':
 l. 419, 'victors': l. 421, 'Lion': l. 432, 'Bee': l. 436, 'roiall . . .
soueraigne': l. 437, 'blood . . . agayn': p. 439 in '90 is misprinted '493.'

Thenceforth eternall vnion shall be made
 Betweene the nations different afore,
 And sacred Peace shall louingly perfwade 440
 The warlike minds, to learne her goodly lore,
 And ciuile armes to exercife no more :
 Then shall a royall virgin raine, which shall
 Stretch her white rod ouer the *Belgicke* shore,
 And the great Castle smite so sore with all,
 That it shall make him shake, and shortly learne to fall.

But yet the end is not. There *Merlin* stayd,
 As ouercomen of the spirites powre,
 Or other ghaftly spectacle difmayd,
 That secretly he faw, yet note difcoure : / 450
 Which fuddein fit, and halfe extatick ftoure
 When the two fearefull women faw, they grew
 Greatly confused in behauioure ;
 At laft the fury paff, to former hew
 Hee turnd againe, and chearefull looks as earft did fhew.

Then, when them felues they well instructed had
 Of all, that needed them to be inquired,
 They both conceiuing hope of comfort glad,
 With lighter hearts vnto their home retir'd :
 Where they in fecret counfell clofe confpir'd, 460
 How to effect fo hard an enterprize,
 And to poffeffe the purpofe they defird,

l. 440, 'perfwade': l. 443, 'Virgin': l. 446, 'learn': catch-word 'Which' not in '96 :—will not further record these oversights. As a rule in '96 the catch-word is given on the second page of each folio, not on the first : l. 451, 'fitt': l. 452, 'women': l. 453, 'behaucoure': l. 455, 'Hee'—misprinted 'Shee' in '90 (not 'She' as Dr. Morris says), and 'She' in '96, but corrected in 'Faults escaped' of the former, 1609 supplies 'as earft'—accepted : *ib.*, 'chearefull.'

Now this, now that twixt them they did deuife,
And diuerse plots did frame, to maske in strange disguise.

At last the Nourse in her foolhardy wit
Conceiu'd a bold deuife, and thus bespake ;
Daughter, I deeme that counsell aye most fit,
That of the time doth dew aduantage take ;
Ye see that good king *Vther* now doth make
Strong warre vpon the Paynim brethren, hight 470
Oëta and *Oza*, whom he lately brake
Beside *Cayr Verolame*, in victorious fight,
That now all *Britanie* doth burne in armes bright.

That therefore nought our passage may empeach,
Let vs in feigned armes our selues disguise, (teach
And our weake hands (whom need new strength shall
The dreadfull speare and shield to exercise :
Ne certes daughter that same warlike wize
I weene, would you misseeme ; for ye bene tall,
And large of limbe, t'atchieue an hard emprize, 480
Ne ought ye want, but skill, which practize small
Will bring, and shortly make you a mayd Martiall.

And / sooth, it ought your courage much inflame,
To heare so often, in that royall hous,
From whence to none inferiour ye came :
Bards tell of many women valorous

l. 463, 'deuize': l. 464, 'strāge': *ib.*, 'disguise'—misprinted in '96
'deuise': l. 466, 'Conceiud': l. 467, 'counsel': l. 471, 'whome hee': l. 473,
'Britany': l. 476, '(need. makes good schollers) teach': l. 479, 'beene':
l. 481, 'kil': l. 482, 'Wil': l. 483, 'corage': l. 485, 'inferior': l. 486,
'women.'

Which haue full many feats aduenturous
 Performd, in paragone of proudest men :
 The bold *Bunduca*, whose victorious
 Exploits made *Rome* to quake, stout *Guendolen*, 490
 Renowned *Martia*, and redoubted *Emmilen*.

And that, which more then all the rest may fway,
 Late dayes enfample, which these eyes beheld,
 In the last field before *Mcnevia*
 Which *Vther* with those forrein Pagans held,
 I saw a *Saxon* Virgin, the which feld
 Great *Vlfin* thrise vpon the bloody plaine,
 And had not *Carados* her hand withheld
 From rash reuenge, she had him surely slaine,
 Yet *Carados* himselfe from her escapt with paine. 500

Ah read, (quoth *Britomart*) how is she hight ?
 Faire *Angela* (quoth she) men do her call,
 No whit lesse faire, then terrible in fight :
 She hath the leading of a Martiall
 And mighty people, dreaded more then all
 The other *Saxons*, which do for her sake
 And loue, themfelues of her name *Angles* call.
 Therefore faire Infant her enfample make
 Vnto thy selfe, and equall courage to thee take.

Her harty words so deepe into the mynd 510
 Of the young Damzell funke, that great desire

l. 490, 'Exploits': l. 497, 'bloody' misprinted 'bloodly' in '90: *ib.*,
 'playne,' and so 'y' for 'i' in ll. 499-500: l. 502, 'Fayre,' and so l. 503:
 .505, 'mightie': l. 506, 'doe': l. 509, 'corage,' and so l. 513: l. 510,
 'wordes,'

Of warlike armes in her forthwith they tynd,
 And generous stout courage did inspire, /
 That she resolu'd, vnweeting to her Sire,
 Aduent'rous knighthood on her selfe to don,
 And counfeld with her Nourse, her Maides attire
 To turne into a massy habergeon,
 And bad her all things put in readinesse anon.

Th'old woman nought, that needed, did omit ;
 But all things did conueniently puruay : 520
 It fortun'd (so time their turne did fit)
 A band of Britons ryding on forray
 Few dayes before, had gotten a great pray
 Of Saxon goods, emongst the which was seene
 A goodly Armour, and ful rich aray,
 Which long'd to *Angela*, the Saxon Queene,
 All fretted round with gold, and goodly well befeene.

The same, with all the other ornaments,
 King *Ryence* caused to be hanged hy
 In his chiefe Church, for endlesse monuments 530
 Of his successe and gladfull victory :
 Of which her selfe auising readily,
 In th'euening late old *Glauce* thither led
 Faire *Britomart*, and that same Armory
 Downe taking, her therein appareled,
 Well as she might, and with braue bauldrick garnished.

Beside those armes there stood a mighty speare,
 Which *Bladud* made by Magick art of yore,

l. 513, '*inspyre*,' and so '*y*' for '*i*' in ll. 514 and 516 : l. 514, '*vnweeting*'—accepted for '*vnmeeting*' of '96 : l. 520, '*things*': *ib.*, '*conueniently*'—misprinted '*conuiently*' in '96 : l. 521, '*fitt*': l. 523, '*dayes*'—misprinted '*dryes*' in '96 : l. 527, '*wel*': l. 533, '*thether*': l. 536, '&': l. 537, '*mightie*.'

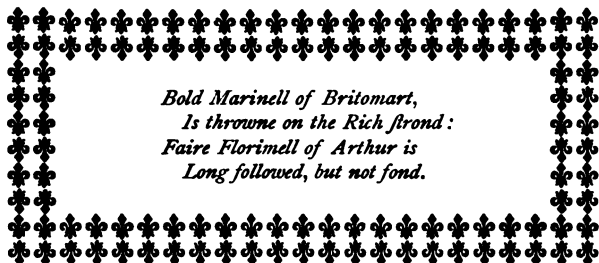
And vfd the fame in battell aye to beare ;
 Sith which it had bin here preferu'd in store, 540
 For his great vertues proued long afore :
 For neuer wight so fast in fell could fit,
 But him perforce vnto the ground it bore :
 Both speare she tooke, and shield, which hong by it :
 Both speare & shield of great powre, for her purpose fit.

Thus / when she had the virgin all arayd,
 Another harnesse, which did hang thereby,
 About her selfe she dight, that the young Mayd
 She might in equall armes accompany,
 And as her Squire attend her carefully : 550
 Tho to their ready Steeds they clombe full light,
 And through back wayes, that none might them espy,
 Couered with secreet cloud of silent night,
 Themselues they forth conuayd, & passed forward right.

Ne rested they, till that to Faery lond
 They came, as *Merlin* them directed late :
 Where meeting with this *Redcrosse* knight, she fond
 Of diuerse things discourses to dilate,
 But most of *Arthegall*, and his estate.
 At last their wayes so fell, that they mote part 560
 Then each to other well affectionate,
 Friendship professed with vnfained hart,
 The *Redcrosse* knight diuerst, but forth rode *Britomart*.

l. 539, 'batteill' : l. 540, 'beene' : l. 545, period (.) dropped both in '90
 and '96 : l. 548, 'yong' : l. 550, 'Squyre' : l. 551, 'Steedes' : l. 552,
 'waies . . . thē' : l. 554, 'conuaid' : l. 558, 'things' : l. 562, 'Frendship'.

Cant. / IIII.



V Here is the Antique glory now become,
 That whilome wont in women to appeare?
 Where be the braue atchieuements doen by some?
 Where be the battels, where the shield and speare,
 And all the conquests, which them high did reare, 10
 That matter made for famous Poets verse,
 And boastfull men so oft abasht to heare?
 Bene they all dead, and laid in dolefull herse?
 Or doen they onely sleepe, and shall againe reuerse?

If they be dead, then woe is me therefore:
 But if they sleepe, ô let them soone awake:
 For all too long I burne with enuy sore,
 To heare the warlike feates, which *Homere* spake
 Of bold *Panthesilee*, which made a lake
 Of *Greekish* blood so oft in *Troian* plaine; 20
 But when I read, how stout *Debora* strake

l. 4, 'Arthur': l. 7, 'whylome . . . women': l. 9, 'battles . . . &':
 l. 13, 'Beene . . . laide': l. 16, 'O': l. 19, 'Penthesilee': l. 20, 'blood
 . . . ofte': l. 21, 'reade.'

Proud *Sifera*, and how *Camill* hath flaine
The huge *Orsilochus*, I swell with great disdaine.

Yet these, and all that else had puissaunce,
Cannot with noble *Britomart* compare,
Aswell for glory of great valiaunce,
As for pure chastitie and vertue rare,
That / all her goodly deeds do well declare.
Well worthy stock, from which the branches sprong,
That in late yeares so faire a blossome bare, 30
As thee, ô Queene, the matter of my song,
Whose lignage from this Lady I deriue along.

Who when through speaches with the *Redcrosse* knight,
She learned had th'estate of *Arthegall*,
And in each point her selfe informd aright,
A friendly league of loue perpetuall
She with him bound, and *Congé* took withall.
Then he forth on his iourney did proceede,
To seeke aduentures which mote him befall,
And win him worship through his warlike deed, 40
Which alwayes of his paines he made the chiefeest meed.

But *Britomart* kept on her former course,
Ne euer doste her armes, but all the way
Grew penfiue through that amorous discourse,
By which the *Redcrosse* knight did earst display
Her louers shape, and cheualrous aray ;
A thousand thoughts she fashioned in her mind,
And in her feigning fancie did pourtray

l. 24, 'els' : l. 26, 'glorie' : l. 28, 'deedes' : l. 29, 'worthie . . . frō' :
l. 31, 'O' : l. 36, 'frenlly' : l. 41, 'ahwaies' : l. 44, 'amarous' : l. 47,
'fashiond.'

Him fuch, as fitteft ſhe for loue could find,
Wife, warlike, perfonable, curteous, and kind. 50

With fuch ſelfe-pleaſing thoughts her wound ſhe fed,
And thought ſo to beguile her grievous ſmart ;
But ſo her ſmart was much more grievous bred,
And the deepe wound more deepe engord her hart,
That nought but death her dolour mote depart.
So forth ſhe rode without reſoſe or reſt,
Searching all lands and each remoteſt part,
Following the guidaunce of her blinded gueſt,
Till that to the ſea-coaſt at length ſhe her addreſt. /

There ſhe alighted from her light-foot beaſt, 60
And ſitting downe vpon the rocky ſhore,
Bad her old Squire vnlace her lofty creaf ;
Tho hauing vewd a while the farges hore,
That gainſt the craggy clifts did loudly rore,
And in their raging furquedry diſdaynd,
That the faſt earth affronted them ſo fore,
And their deuoring couetize reſtraynd,
Thereat ſhe fighed deepe, and after thus complaynd.

Huge ſea of ſorrow, and tempeſtuouſ grieſe,
Wherein my feeble barke is toſſed long, 70
Far from the hoped hauen of relieſe,
Why do thy cruell billowes beat ſo ſtrong,
And thy moyſt mountaines each on others throng,
Threatning to ſwallow vp my fearefull life ?
O do thy cruell wrath and ſpightfull wrong

L. 49, 'he' [*sic*] : L. 51, 'fadd,' and ſo all the rhyme-words of the stanza double *d* : L. 54, 'deep' (2nd) : L. 58, 'guydaunce' : L. 59, 'ſea-coaſt' : L. 62, 'Badd . . . Squire' : L. 72, 'cruel' : L. 74, 'lyſe,' and ſo ll. 76-7, 'y' for 'i.'

At length allay, and stint thy stormy strife,
Which in these troubled bowels raignes, & rageth rife.

For else my feeble vessell crazd, and crackt
Through thy strong buffets and outrageous blowes,
Cannot endure, but needs it must be wrackt 80
On the rough rocks, or on the sandy shallowes,
The whiles that loue it steres, and fortune rowes ;
Loue my lewd Pilot hath a restlesse mind
And fortune Botefwaine no assuraunce knowes,
But faile withouten starres, gainst tide and wind :
How can they other do, fith both are bold and blind ?

Thou God of winds, that raigest in the seas,
That raigest also in the Continent,
At last blow vp some gentle gale of ease,
The which may bring my ship, ere it be rent, 90
Vnto / the gladfome port of her intent :
Then when I shall my selfe in safety see,
A table for eternall moniment
Of thy great grace, and my great ieopardie,
Great *Neptune*, I auow to hallow vnto thee.

Then fighting softly fore, and inly deepe,
She shut vp all her plaint in priuy grieve ;
For her great courage would not let her weepe,
Till that old *Glauce* gan with sharpe reprieve,
Her to restraine, and giue her good reliefe, 100
Through hope of those, which *Merlin* had her told
Should of her name and nation be chiefe,

l. 77, 'thy': l. 78, 'els': l. 80, 'neede': l. 83, 'Pilot' . . . minde':
l. 85, 'tyde . . . winde': l. 86, 'doe . . . blinde': l. 87, 'windes.'

And fetch their being from the sacred mould
Of her immortall wombe, to be in heauen enrold.

Thus as she her recomforted, she spyde,
Where farre away one all in armour bright,
With hastie gallop towards her did ryde ;
Her dolour soone she ceast, and on her dight
Her Helmet, to her Courser mounting light :
Her former sorrow into suddein wrath, 110
Both coosen passions of distroubled spright,
Conuerting, forth she beates the dustie path ;
Loue and despight attonce her courage kindled hath.

As when a foggy mist hath ouercast
The face of heauen, and the cleare aire engroft,
The world in darkenesse dwels, till that at last
The watry Southwinde from the seabord cost
Vpblowing, doth disperfe the vapour lo'ft,
And poures it selfe forth in a stormy showre ;
So the faire *Britomart* hauing disclo'ft 120
Her cloudy care into a wrathfull stowre,
The mist of grieve diffolu'd, into vengeance powre. /

Estsoones her goodly shield addresssing faire,
That mortall speare she in her hand did take,
And vnto battell did her selfe prepaire.
The knight approching, sternely her bespake ;
Sir knight, that doest thy voyage rashly make
By this forbidden way in my despight,
Ne doest by others death enfample take,

l. 104, 'womb': l. 107, 'hasty': l. 112, 'dusty': l. 115, 'heuen
ayre engroste': l. 116, 'darknes': l. 117, 'coste': l. 118, 'lo'ste': l. 120,
'fayre . . . disclo'ste': l. 123, 'fayre,' and so 'y' for 'i' in l. 125: l. 125,
'battaill.'

I read thee soone retyre, whiles thou haft might, 130
Leaft afterwards it be too late to take thy flight.

Ythrild with deepe disdaine of his proud threat,
She shortly thus ; Fly they, that need to fly ;
Words fearen babes. I meane not thee entreat
To passe ; but maugre thee will passe or dy.
Ne lenger stayd for th'other to reply,
But with sharpe speare the rest made dearly knowne.
Strongly the straunge knight ran, and sturdily
Strooke her full on the brest, that made her downe
Decline her head, & touch her crouper with her crowne.

But she againe him in the shield did smite 141
With so fierce furie and great puiffaunce,
That through his threesquare scuchin percing quite,
And through his mayled hauberque by mischaunce
The wicked steele through his left side did glaunce ;
Him so transfixed she before her bore
Beyond his croupe, the length of all her launce,
Till sadly foucing on the sandie shore,
He tombled on an heape, and wallowd in his gore.

Like as the sacred Oxe, that carelesse stands, 150
With gilden hornes, and flowry girlonds crownd,
Proud of his dying honor and deare bands,
Whiles th'altars fume with frankincense arownd,
All / suddenly with mortall stroke astownd,
Doth groueling fall, and with his streaming gore
Distaines the pillours, and the holy grownd,

l. 134, 'Wordes': l. 137, 'speare' in 1609 accepted for 'speares' of '90
and '96: l. 138, 'Strongly'—misprinted 'Strongly': l. 140, 'crown': l. 148,
'sandy': l. 152, 'bandes': l. 154, 'suddenly.'

And the faire flowres, that decked him afore ;
So fell proud *Marinell* vpon the pretious shore.

The martiall Mayd stayd not him to lament,
But forward rode, and kept her readie way 160
Along the strond, which as she ouer-went,
She saw bestrowed all with rich aray
Of pearles and pretious stones of great assay,
And all the grauell mixt with golden owre ;
Whereat she wondred much, but would not stay
For gold, or perles, or pretious stones an howre,
But them despised all ; for all was in her powre.

Whiles thus he lay in deadly stonishment,
Tydings hereof came to his mothers eare ;
His mother was the blacke-browd *Cymoent*, 170
The daughter of great *Nereus*, which did beare
This warlike sonne vnto an earthly peare,
The famous *Dumarin* ; who on a day
Finding the Nymph asleepe in secret wheare,
As he by chaunce did wander that fame way,
Was taken with her loue, and by her clofely lay.

There he this knight of her begot, whom borne
She of his father *Marinell* did name,
And in a rocky caue as wight forlorne,
Long time she fostred vp, till he became 180
A mightie man at armes, and mickle fame
Did get through great aduentures by him donne :
For neuer man he suffred by that fame
Rich strond to trauell, whereas he did wonne,
But that he must do battell with the Sea-nymphes sonne./

l. 160, 'ready' : l. 181, 'mighty' : l. 185, 'battail.'

An hundred knights of honorable name

He had subdew'd, and them his vaffals made,
 That through all Farie lond his noble fame
 Now blazed was, and feare did all inuade,
 That none durst paffen through that perilous glade.
 And to aduance his name and glorie more, 191
 Her Sea-god fyre she dearely did perfwade,
 T'endow her sonne with threasure and rich store,
 Boue all the sonnes, that were of earthly wombes ybore.

The God did graunt his daughters deare demaund,
 To doen his Nephew in all riches flow ;
 Eftfoones his heaped waues he did commaund,
 Out of their hollow bosome forth to throw
 All the huge threasure, which the sea below
 Had in his greedie gulfe deuoured deepe, 200
 And him enriched through the ouerthrow
 And wreckes of many wretches, which did weepe,
 And often waile their wealth, which he from them did
 keepe.

Shortly vpon that shore there heaped was,
 Exceeding riches and all pretious things,
 The spoyle of all the world, that it did pas
 The wealth of th'Eaſt and pompe of *Persian* kings ;
 Gold, amber, yuorie, perles, owches, rings,
 And all that elſe was pretious and deare,
 The ſea vnto him voluntary brings, 210
 That ſhortly he a great Lord did appeare,
 As was in all the lond of Faery, or elſewhere.

l. 191, 'glory' : l. 200, 'greedy' : l. 203, 'wayle' : l. 209, 'els' : l. 212,
 'elſe wheare.'

Thereto he was a doughtie dreaded knight,
 Tryde often to the scath of many deare,
 That none in equall armes him matchen might,
 The which his mother seeing, gan to feare
 Least / his too haughtie hardines might reare
 Some hard mishap, in hazard of his life :
 For thy, she oft him counfeld to forbear
 The bloudie battell, and to stirre vp strife, 220
 But after all his warre, to rest his wearie knife.

And for his more assurance, she inquir'd
 One day of *Proteus* by his mightie spell,
 (For *Proteus* was with prophecie inspir'd)
 Her deare sonnes destinie to her to tell,
 And the sad end of her sweet *Marinell*.
 Who through foresight of his eternall skill,
 Bad her from womankind to keep him well :
 For of a woman he should haue much ill,
 A virgin strange and stout him should dismay, or kill.

For thy, she gaue him warning euery day, 231
 The loue of women not to entertaine ;
 A lesson too too hard for liuing clay,
 From loue in course of nature to refrain :
 Yet he his mothers lore did well retaine,
 And euer from faire Ladies loue did fly ;
 Yet many Ladies faire did oft complaine,
 That they for loue of him would algates dy :
 Dy, who so list for him, he was loues enemy.

l. 213, 'doughty' : l. 214, 'Deare' : ll. 219, 231, , inserted after 'thy' :
 l. 220, 'bloody batteill' : l. 222, 'assurance' : l. 223, 'mighty' : l. 224,
 'prophecy' : l. 225, 'destiny' : l. 230, 'strange' : l. 236, 'fayre,' and so
 l. 237.

But ah, who can deceiue his destiny, 240
 Or weene by warning to auoyd his fate?
 That when he sleepes in most security,
 And safest seemes, him soonest doth amate,
 And findeth dew effect or soone or late.
 So feeble is the powre of fleshly arme.
 His mother bad him womens loue to hate,
 For she of womans force did feare no harme;
 So weening to haue arm'd him, she did quite disarme. /

This was that woman, this that deadly wound,
 That *Proteus* prophecide should him dismay, 250
 The which his mother vainely did expound,
 To be hart-wounding loue, which should assay
 To bring her sonne vnto his last decay.
 So tickle be the termes of mortall state,
 And full of subtile sophismes, which do play
 With double senses, and with false debate,
 T'approue the vnknown purpose of eternall fate.

Too true the famous *Marinell* it fownd,
 Who through late triall, on that wealthy Strond
 Inglorious now lies in senselesse fownd, 260
 Through heauy stroke of *Britomartis* hond.
 Which when his mother deare did vnderstond,
 And heauy tydings heard, whereas she playd
 Amongst her watry sisters by a pond,
 Gathering sweet daffadillyes, to haue made
 Gay girlonds, from the Sun their foreheads faire to shade.

l. 245, 'fleshy': l. 246, 'womens': l. 249, 'wound,' and so 'w' in
 ll. 251-2 for 'u': l. 254, 'tickle': l. 255, 'doe': l. 256, 'fences': l. 258,
 'trew': l. 260, 'senselesse': l. 263, 'tidings': l. 265, 'swete': l. 266,
 'fayr,' and , for (.) .

Eftfoones both flowres and girlonds farre away
 She flong, and her faire deawy lockes yrent,
 To sorrow huge she turnd her former play,
 And gameson merth to grievous dreriment : 270
 She threw her selfe downe on the Continent,
 Ne word did speake, but lay as in a fwowne,
 Whiles all her sisters did for her lament,
 With yelling outcries, and with shrieking fowne ;
 And euery one did teare her girlond from her crowne.

Soone as she vp out of her deadly fit
 Arose, she bad her charet to be brought,
 And all her sisters, that with her did sit,
 Bad eke attonce their charrets to be fought ;
 Tho / full of bitter griefe and pensiuue thought, 280
 She to her wagon clombe ; clombe all the rest,
 And forth together went, with sorrow fraught.
 The waues obedient to their beheast,
 Them yielded readie passage, and their rage furceast.

Great *Neptune* flood amazed at their sight,
 Whiles on his broad round backe they softly slid
 And eke himselfe mournd at their mournfull plight,
 Yet wist not what their wailing ment, yet did
 For great compassion of their sorrow, bid
 His mightie waters to them buxome bee ; 290
 Eftfoones the roaring billowes still abid,

l. 267, 'Eftfoones . . . far' : l. 268, 'Shee . . . locks' : l. 271, 'Shee,'
 and so l. 276 : l. 272, 'fwownd' : l. 273, 'al' : l. 276, 'fitt' : l. 277, 'charett,'
 and so double t in l. 278 : l. 279, 'charettis' : l. 280, 'pensife' : l. 283,
 'theyr' : l. 284, 'ready' : l. 285, 'flood' : l. 286, 'round' : l. 287, 'him
 selfe' : l. 289, 'sorrow' : l. 290, 'mighty' : l. 291, 'Eftfoones.'

And all the grievedly Monsters of the See
 Stood gaping at their gate, and wondred them to see.

A teme of Dolphins raunged in aray,
 Drew the smooth charet of sad *Cymoent* ;
 They were all taught by *Triton*, to obay
 To the long raynes, at her commaundement :
 As swift as swallowes, on the waues they went,
 That their broad flaggie finnes no fome did reare,
 Ne bubbling roundell they behind them sent ; 300
 The rest of other fishes drawn weare,
 Which with their finny oars the swelling sea did sheare.

Soone as they bene arriu'd vpon the brim
 Of the *Rich strond*, their charrets they forlore,
 And let their temed fishes softly swim
 Along the margent of the fomy shore,
 Least they their finnes should bruze, and furbate fore
 Their tender feet vpon the stony ground :
 And comming to the place, where all in gore
 And cruddy blood enwallowed they found 310
 The luckleffe *Marinell*, lying in deadly ffound ; /

His mother fowned thrife, and the third time
 Could scarce recouered be out of her paine ;
 Had she not bene deuoyd of mortall slime,
 She should not then haue bene reliu'd againe ;

l. 295, 'charett': l. 297, 'raynes'—accepted for 'traines' of '96—not 'traynes' as Dr. Morris notes: l. 298, 'swifte': l. 299, 'brode flaggy': l. 300, 'bubbling roundell . . . behinde': l. 308, 'ferte . . . ground,' and so 'w' for 'u' in the stanza's rhyme-words: l. 310, 'blood': l. 314, 'beene deuoyde': l. 315, 'relyu'd,' and ; for ,—the former accepted.

But soone as life recouered had the raine,
 She made so piteous mone and deare wayment,
 That the hard rocks could scarfe from teares refraine,
 And all her sifter Nymphes with one consent
 Supplide her sobbing breaches with sad complement.

Deare image of my selfe (she said) that is, 321
 The wretched sonne of wretched mother borne,
 Is this thine high aduancement, ô is this
 Th'immortall name, with which thee yet vnborne
 Thy Granfire *Nereus* promist to adorne?
 Now lyeft thou of life and honor reft;
 Now lyeft thou a lumpe of earth forlorne,
 Ne of thy late life memory is left,
 Ne can thy irreuocable destiny be weft?

Fond *Proteus*, father of false prophecis, 330
 And they more fond, that credit to thee giue,
 Not this the worke of womans hand ywis, (driue.
 That so deepe wound through these deare members
 I feared loue: but they that loue do liue,
 But they that die, doe neither loue nor hate.
 Nath'lesse to thee thy folly I forgiue,
 And to my selfe, and to accursed fate
 The guilt I doe ascribe: deare wisedome bought too late.

O what auales it of immortall feed
 To beene ybred and neuer borne to die? 340
 Farre better I it deeme to die with speed,
 Then waste in woe and wailefull miserie.

l. 321, 'said': l. 323, 'O': l. 326, 'reste': l. 328, 'leste': l. 329, 'be
 weste': l. 334, 'doe': l. 335, 'dye . . . nether': l. 340, 'ybredd . . . dye':
 l. 342, 'woyfull miserie.'

Who / dyes the vtmost dolour doth abyē,
 But who that liues, is left to waile his losse :
 So life is losse, and death felicitie.
 Sad life worfe then glad death : and greater crosse
 To see friends graue, the dead the graue selfe to engrosse.

But if the heauens did his dayes enuie,
 And my short blisse maligne, yet mote they well
 Thus much afford me, ere that he did die 350
 That the dim eyes of my deare *Marinell*
 I mote haue closed, and him bed farewell,
 Sith other offices for mother meet
 They would not graunt.
 Yet maulgre them farewell, my sweetest sweet ;
 Farewell my sweetest sonne, fith we no more shall meet.

Thus when they all had sorrowed their fill,
 They softly gan to search his griefly wound :
 And that they might him handle more at will,
 They him disarm'd, and spredding on the ground 360
 Their watchet mantles frindgd with filuer round,
 They softly wipt away the gelly blood
 From th'orifice ; which hauing well vpbound,
 They poud in foueraine balme, and Nectar good,
 Good both for earthly med'cine, and for heauenly food.

Tho when the lilly handed *Liagore*,
 (This *Liagore* whylome had learned skill

l. 343, 'dolor' : l. 344, 'lefte' : l. 345, 'felicity' : l. 347, 'frends . . . self' : l. 349, 'blis' : l. 351, 'cies' : l. 355, 'Yett' : l. 356, 'till we againe may meet' : l. 358, 'wound,' and so 'w' for 'u' in the stanza's rhyme-words : l. 360, 'disarmd' : l. 362, 'gelly blood' is improved by 1611 to 'jelly'd blood' : l. 365, 'heuenly' : l. 367, 'whilome,' and so l. 369.

In leaches craft, by great *Appolloes* lore,
 Sith her whylome vpon high *Pindus* hill,
 He loued, and at last her wombe did fill 370
 With heauenly seed, whereof wise *Pæon* sprong)
 Did feele his pulse, she knew their staied still
 Some litle life his feeble sprites emong ;
 Which to his mother told, despeire she from her flong. /

Tho vp him taking in their tender hands,
 They easily vnto her charet beare :
 Her teme at her commaundement quiet stands,
 Whiles they the corse into her wagon reare,
 And strow with flowres the lamentable beare :
 Then all the rest into their coches clim, 380
 And through the brackish waues their passage sheare ;
 Vpon great *Neptunes* necke they softly swim,
 And to her watry chamber swiftly carry him.

Deepe in the bottome of the sea, her bowre
 Is built of hollow billowes heaped hye,
 Like to thicke cloudes, that threat a stormy showre,
 And vaulted all within, like to the sky,
 In which the Gods do dwell eternally :
 There they him laid in easie couch well dight ;
 And sent in hafte for *Tryphon*, to apply 390
 Salues to his wounds, and medicines of might :
 For *Tryphon* of sea gods the soueraine leach is hight.

The whiles the *Nymphes* sit all about him round,
 Lamenting his mishap and heauy plight ;

l. 371, 'heuenly' : l. 372, 'shee' : l. 374, 'despeyre . . . fro' : l. 376, 'easely . . . charett' : l. 379, 'strowe' : l. 381, 'shear' : l. 386, 'clouds' : l. 387, 'Skye' : l. 388, 'doe' : l. 389, 'laide . . . easly' : l. 393, 'sitt . . . round,' and so 'w' for 'u' in the stanza's rhyme-words.

And oft his mother vewing his wide wound,
 Curfed the hand, that did fo deadly fmight
 Her deareft fonne, her deareft harts delight.
 But none of all thofe curfes ouertooke
 The warlike Maid, th'ensample of that might,
 But fairely well ſhe thriu'd, and well did brooke 400
 Her noble deeds, ne her right courfe for ought for-
 ooke.

Yet did falſe *Archimage* her ſtill purfew,
 To bring to paſſe his miſchieuous intent,
 Now that he had her ſingled from the crew
 Of courteous knights, the Prince, and Faery gent,
 Whom / late in chace of beautie excellent
 She left, purfewing that fame fofter ſtrong ;
 Of whoſe foule outrage they impatient,
 And full of fiery zeale, him followed long, 409
 To reſkew her from ſhame, and to reuenge her wrong.

Through thick and thin, through mountaines & through
 Thoſe two great chãpions did attonce purfew (plains,
 The fearefull damzell, with inceſſant paines :
 Who from them fled, as light-foot hare from vew
 Of hunter ſwift, and ſent of houndes trew.
 At laſt they came vnto a double way,
 Where, doubtfull which to take, her to reſkew,
 Themſelues they did diſpart, each to aſſay,
 Whether more happie were, to win ſo goodly pray.

l. 395, 'ofte' : l. 399, 'Maide' : l. 400, 'ſhee thryud' : l. 405, 'Fary' :
 l. 406, 'beauty' : l. 408, 'foule' : l. 409, 'firy zeale' : l. 411, 'mountains
 ... playns' : l. 412, 'gret' : l. 413, 'payns' : l. 415, 'ſwifte ... houndes' :
 l. 419, 'happy.'

But *Timias*, the Princes gentle Squire, 420
 That Ladies loue vnto his Lord forlent,
 And with proud enuy, and indignant ire,
 After that wicked foster fiercely went.
 So beene they three three fundry wayes ybent.
 But fairest fortune to the Prince befell,
 Whose chaunce it was, that soone he did repent,
 To take that way, in which that Damozell
 Was fled afore, affraid of him, as feend of hell.

At last of her farre off he gained vew :
 Then gan he freshly pricke his fomy steed, 430
 And euer as he higher to her drew,
 So euermore he did increase his speed,
 And of each turning still kept warie heed :
 Aloud to her he ostentimes did call,
 To doe away vaine doubt, and needlesse dread :
 Full myld to her he spake, and oft let fall
 Many meeke wordes, to stay and comfort her withall./

But nothing might relent her hastie flight ;
 So deepe the deadly feare of that soule fwaine
 Was earst impressd in her gentle spright : 440
 Like as a fearefull Doue, which through the raine,
 Of the wide aire her way does cut amaine,
 Hauing farre off espyde a Tassell gent,
 Which after her his nimble wings doth straine,
 Doubleth her hafte for feare to be for-hent,
 And with her pineons cleaues the liquid firmament.

l. 420, '*Squyre*': l. 422, '*yre*': l. 424, '*fondry*': l. 425, '*fayrest*':
 l. 428, '*fled*': l. 429, '*far of*': l. 433, '*wary*': l. 434, '*Aloud*': l. 438,
 '*hasty*': l. 442, '*ayre*': l. 444, '*winges*': l. 445, '*hast . . . bee*': *ib.*,
 '*for-hent*' in 1609 '*fore-hent*.'

With no lesse haste, and eke with no lesse dreed,
 That fearefull Ladie fled from him, that ment
 To her no euill thought, nor euill deed ;
 Yet former feare of being fowly shent, 450
 Carried her forward with her first intent :
 And though oft looking backward, well she vewd,
 Her selfe freed from that foster insolent,
 And that it was a knight, which now her sewd,
 Yet she no lesse the knight feard, then that villein rude.

His vncouth shield and straunge armes her difmayd,
 Whose like in Faery lond were seldome seene,
 That fast she from him fled, no lesse affrayd,
 Then of wilde beastes if she had chafed beene :
 Yet he her followd still with courage keene, 460
 So long that now the golden *Hesperus*
 Was mounted high in top of heauen sheene,
 And warnd his other brethren ioyeous,
 To light their blessed lamps in *Ioues* eternall hous.

All suddenly dim woxe the dampish ayre,
 And griesly shadowes couered heauen bright,
 That now with thousand starres was decked fayre ;
 Which when the Prince beheld, a lothfull fight,
 And / that perforce, for want of lenger light,
 He mote surcease his suit, and lose the hope 470
 Of his long labour, he gan fowly wyte
 His wicked fortune, that had turnd aslope,
 And curfed night, that reft from him so goodly scope.

l. 447, 'hast' : l. 448, 'fled' : l. 452, 'vewde' : l. 454, 'sewde' : l. 457,
 'seldom' : l. 458, 'fled' : l. 460, 'corage' : l. 465, 'suddenly . . . wox' :
 l. 470, 'surceasse.'

Tho when her wayes he could no more defcry,
 But to and fro at disaunture strayd ;
 Like as a ship, whose Lodestarre suddenly
 Couered with cloudes, her Pilot hath dismayd ;
 His wearisome pursuit perforce he stayd,
 And from his loftie steed dismounting low,
 Did let him forage. Downe himselfe he layd 480
 Vpon the grassie ground, to sleepe a throw ;
 The cold earth was his couch, the hard steele his pillow.

But gentle Sleepe enuyde him any rest ;
 In stead thereof sad sorrow, and disdaine
 Of his hard hap did vexe his noble brest,
 And thousand fancies bet his idle braine
 With their light wings, the fighes of semblants vaine:
 Oft did he wish, that Lady faire mote bee
 His Faery Queene, for whom he did complaine:
 Or that his Faery Queene were such, as shee : 490
 And euer hastie Night he blamed bitterlie.

Night thou foule Mother of annoyance sad,
 Sifter of heauie death, and nourse of woe,
 Which wast begot in heauen, but for thy bad
 And brutish shape thrust downe to hell below,
 Where by the grim floud of *Cocytus* flow
 Thy dwelling is, in *Herebus* blacke hous,
 (Blacke *Herebus* thy husband is the foe
 Of all the Gods) where thou vngratious,
 Halfe of thy dayes doest lead in horroure hideous. / 500

l. 476, '*Lodestar suddenly*': l. 477, '*Pilott*': l. 481, '*grassy*': l. 486,
 '*bet . . . ydle braine*': l. 489, '*faery*': l. 490, '*hee*': l. 491, '*hasty*':
 l. 492, '*annoyance*': l. 498, '*Black*.'

What had th'eternall Maker need of thee,
 The world in his continuall course to keepe,
 That doest all things deface, ne lettest see
 The beautie of his worke? Indeed in sleepe
 The slouthfull bodie, that doth loue to steepe
 His lustlesse limbes, and drowne his baser mind,
 Doth praise thee oft, and oft from *Stygian* deepe
 Calles thee, his goddesse in his error blind, (kind.
 And great Dame Natures handmaide, chearing euery

But well I wote, that to an heauy hart 510
 Thou art the root and nurse of bitter cares,
 Breeder of new, renewer of old smarts :
 In stead of rest thou lendest rayling teares,
 In stead of sleepe thou sendest troublous feares,
 And dreadfull visions, in the which aliue
 The drearie image of sad death appeares :
 So from the wearie spirit thou doest driue
 Defired rest, and men of happinesse depriue.

Vnder thy mantle blacke there hidden lye,
 Light-shonning theft, and traiterous intent, 520
 Abhorred bloudshed, and vile felony,
 Shamefull deceipt, and daunger imminent ;
 Foule horror, and eke hellish dreriment :
 All these I wote in thy protection bee,
 And light doe shonne, for feare of being shent :
 For light ylike is loth'd of them and thee,
 And all that lewdnesse loue, doe hate the light to see.

l. 503, '*things*': l. 505, '*body . . . sleep*': l. 508, '*error*': l. 511,
 '*roote . . . nurse*': l. 516, '*dreary*': l. 519, '*black*': l. 520, '*thefts*':
 l. 521, '*bloodshed*': l. 523, '*Foule*.'

For day discouers all difhonest wayes,
 And sheweth each thing, as it is indeed :
 The prayfes of high God he faire displays; 530
 And his large bountie rightly doth areed.
 Dayes / dearest children be the blessed feed,
 Which darknesse shall subdew, and heauen win ;
 Truth is his daughter ; he her first did breed,
 Most sacred virgin, without spot of fin.
 Our life is day, but death with darknesse doth begin.

O when will day then turne to me againe,
 And bring with him his long expected light ?
 O *Titan*, hafte to reare thy ioyous waine :
 Speed thee to spread abroad thy beames bright ? 540
 And chase away this too long lingring night,
 Chase her away, from whence she came, to hell.
 She, she it is, that hath me done despight :
 There let her with the damned spirits dwell,
 And yeeld her roome to day, that can it gouerne well.

Thus did the Prince that wearie night outweare,
 In restlesse anguish and vnquiet paine :
 And earely, ere the morrow did vpreare
 His deawy head out of the *Ocean* maine,
 He vp arose, as halfe in great disdaine, 550
 And clombe vnto his steed. So forth he went,
 With heauie looke and lumpish pace, that plaine
 In him bewraid great grudge and maltalent :
 His steed eke seem'd t'apply his steps to his intent. /

l. 532, 'The children of day' : l. 535, 'sinne' : l. 539, 'hafte' : l. 545, 'roume' : l. 552, 'heawy.'

Cant. V.

*Prince Arthur heares of Florimell :
three fosters Timias wound,
Belphebe finds him almost dead,
and reareth out of fownd.*

VVonder it is to see, in diuerse minds,
How diuerfly loue doth his pageants play,
And shewes his powre in variable kinds :
The bafer wit, whose idle thoughts alway
Are wont to cleaue vnto the lowly clay, 10
It stirreth vp to sensuall desire,
And in lewd slouth to wast his carelesse day :
But in braue sprite it kindles goodly fire,
That to all high desert and honour doth aspire.

Ne suffereth it vncomely idlenesse,
In his free thought to build her sluggish nest :
Ne suffereth it thought of vngentlenesse,
Euer to creepe into his noble brest,
But to the higheft and the worthiest
Lifteth it vp, that else would lowly fall : 20
It lets not fall, it lets it not to rest :

l. 4, 'findes': l. 6, 'mindes,' and so l. 8 'es' for 's': l. 7, 'pageants':
l. 9, 'ydle': l. 20, 'els': l. 21, 'lettes' (bis), and so l. 22.

It lets not scarfe this Prince to breath at all,
But to his first pourfuit him forward ftill doth call.

Who long time wandred through the forreft wyde,
To finde some iffue thence, till that at laft
He met a Dwarfe, that seemed terrifyde
With fome late perill, which he hardly pafte,
Or / other accident, which him aghaft ;
Of whom he asked, whence he lately came,
And whither now he trauelled fo faft : 30
For fore he fwat, and running through that fame
Thicke foreft, was befcraucht, & both his feet nigh lame.

Panting for breath, and almoft out of hart,
The Dwarfe him answerd, Sir, ill mote I ftay
To tell the fame. I lately did depart
From Faery court, where I haue many a day
Serued a gentle Lady of great fway,
And high accompt through out all Elfin land,
Who lately left the fame, and tooke this way :
Her now I feeke, and if ye vnderftand 40
Which way fhe fared hath, good Sir tell out of hand.

What mifter wight (faid he) and how arayd ?
Royally clad (quoth he) in cloth of gold,
As meeteft may befeeme a noble mayd ;
Her faire lockes in rich circlet be enrold,
And fairer wight did neuer Sunne behold,
And on a Palfrey rides more white then fnow,
Yet fhe her felfe is whiter manifold :

l. 24, 'foreft' : l. 25, 'at the laft' in 1609 : l. 30, 'whether . . . tra-
ueiled' : l. 31, 'ronning' : l. 42, 'faide,' and so l. 51 : l. 46, 'A fayrer' :
l. 47, 'rydes.'

The surest signe, whereby ye may her know,
Is that she is the fairest wight aliué, I trow. 50

Now certes swaine (said he) such one I weene,
Fast flying through this forest from her fo,
A foule ill fauoured foster, I haue seene ;
Her selfe, well as I might, I reskewd tho,
But could not stay ; so fast she did foregoe,
Carried away with wings of speedy feare.
Ah dearest God (quoth he) that is great woe,
And wondrous ruth to all, that shall it heare.
But can ye read Sir, how I may her find, or where. /

Perdy me leuer were to weeten that, 60
(Said he) then ransome of the richest knight,
Or all the good that euer yet I gat :
But froward fortune, and too forward Night
Such happineffe did, maulgre, to me spight,
And fro me reft both life and light attone.
But Dwarfe aread, what is that Lady bright,
That through this forest wandreth thus alone ;
For of her errour straunge I haue great ruth and mone.

That Lady is (quoth he) where so she bee,
The bountiest virgin, and most debonaire, 70
That euer liuing eye I weene did see ;
Liues none this day, that may with her compare
In stedfast chastitie and vertue rare,
The goodly ornaments of beautie bright ;
And is ycleped *Florimell* the faire,

l. 59, 'finde' : l. 61, 'saide' : l. 67, 'forrest' : l. 69, 'Ladie' : l. 70, 'dkbonaire' [sic] : l. 75, 'fayre.'

Faire *Florimell* belou'd of many a knight,
Yet she loues none but one, that *Marinell* is hight.

A Sea-nymphes sonne, that *Marinell* is hight,
Of my deare Dame is loued dearely well ;
In other none, but him, she sets delight, 80
All her delight is set on *Marinell* ;
But he sets nought at all by *Florimell* :
For Ladies loue his mother long ygoe
Did him, they say, forwarne through sacred spell.
But fame now flies, that of a forreine foe
He is yslaine, which is the ground of all our woe.

Fiue dayes there be, since he (they say) was slaine,
And foure, since *Florimell* the Court for-went,
And vowed neuer to returne againe,
Till him aliue or dead she did inuent. 90
There / fore, faire Sir, for loue of knighthood gent,
And honour of trew Ladies, if ye may
By your good counsell, or bold hardiment,
Or succour her, or me direct the way ;
Do one, or other good, I you most humbly pray.

So may you gaine to you full great renowme,
Of all good Ladies through the world so wide,
And haply in her hart find highest rowme,
Of whom ye seeke to be most magnifide :
At least eternall meede shall you abide. 100
To whom the Prince ; Dwarfe, comfort to thee take,
For till thou tidings learne, what her betide,

l. 76, 'a' mis-inserted before 'many' in '96 : l. 87, 'daies' : l. 88, 'foure . . . forwent' : l. 98, 'finde,' and so l. 106, and so 'e' for 'd' in rhyme-words of latter stanza.

I here auow thee neuer to forfake.
 Ill weares he armes, that nill them vse for Ladies fake.

So with the Dwarfe he backe return'd againe,
 To seeke his Lady, where he mote her find ;
 But by the way he greatly gan complaine
 The want of his good Squire late left behind,
 For whom he wondrous pensiue grew in mind,
 For doubt of daunger, which mote him betide ; 110
 For him he loued aboue all mankind,
 Hauing him trew and faithfull euer tride,
 And bold, as euer Squire that waited by knights fide:

Who all this while full hardly was affayd
 Of deadly daunger, which to him betid ;
 For whiles his Lord purfewd that noble Mayd,
 After that foster fowle he fiercely rid,
 To bene auenged of the shame, he did
 To that faire Damzell : Him he chaced long (hid
 Through the thicke woods, wherein he would haue
 His shamefull head from his auengement strong. 121
 And oft him threatned death for his outrageous wrong./

Nathlesse the villen sped himselfe so well,
 Whether through swiftnesse of his speedy beaft ;
 Or knowledge of those woods, where he did dwell,
 That shortly he from daunger was releast,
 And out of sight escaped at the least ;
 Yet not escaped from the dew reward
 Of his bad deeds, which dayly he increaft,

l. 110, 'doubt'—misprinted 'dout' in '96 : l. 112, 'faithfull' is misprinted 'faithfall' in '96 : l. 113, 'Squyre' : l. 115, 'betidd,' and so double d in l. 117 : l. 123, 'villain' : l. 124, 'speedie' : l. 129, 'deedes.'

Ne ceaſed not, till him oppreſſed hard 130
The heauy plague, that for ſuch leachours is prepard.

For ſoone as he was vaniſht out of fight,
His coward courage gan emboldned bee,
And caſt t'auenge him of that fowle deſpight,
Which he had borne of his bold enimee.
Tho to his brethren came: for they were three
Vngratious children of one graceleſſe fire,
And vnto them complained, how that he
Had uſed bene of that foolhardy Squire;
So them with bitter words he ſtir'd to bloody ire. 140

Forthwith themſelues with their ſad inſtruments
Of ſpoyle and murder they gan arme byliue,
And with him forth into the foreſt went,
To wreake the wrath, which he did earſt reuiue
In their ſterne breſts, on him which late did driue
Their brother to reproch and ſhamefull flight:
For they had vow'd, that neuer he aliue
Out of that foreſt ſhould eſcape their might;
Vile rancour their rude harts had filld with ſuch deſpight.

Within that wood there was a couert glade, 150
Foreby a narrow foord, to them well knowne,
Through which it was vneath for wight to wade;
And now by fortune it was ouerflowne:
By / that ſame way they knew that Squire vnknowne
Mote algates paſſe; for thy, themſelues they ſet
There in await, with thicke woods ouer growne,

l. 131, 'heauie': l. 137, 'ſyre': l. 138, 'complaynd': l. 139, 'beene . . .
foolhardie Squire': l. 140, 'bloodie yre': l. 143, 'foorth . . . forreſt':
l. 152, 'made,' but corrected in 'Faults eſcaped' by 'Wade': l. 154,
'Squire,' and ſo l. 160: l. 155, , inserted after 'thy.'

And all the while their malice they did whet
With cruell threats, his passage through the ford to let.

It fortun'd, as they deuized had,
The gentle Squire came ryding that same way, 160
Vnweeting of their wile and treason bad,
And through the ford to passen did affay ;
But that fierce foster, which late fled away,
Stoutly forth stepping on the further shore,
Him boldly bad his passage there to stay,
Till he had made amends, and full restore
For all the damage, which he had him doen afore.

With that at him a quiu'ring dart he threw,
With so fell force and villeinous despighte,
That through his haberieon the forkehead flew, 170
And through the linked mayles emperced quite,
But had no powre in his soft flesh to bite :
That stroke the hardy Squire did fore displease,
But more that him he could not come to fmite ;
For by no meanes the high banke he could fease,
But labour'd long in that deepe ford with vaine difease.

And still the foster with his long bore-speare
Him kept from landing at his wished will ;
Anone one sent out of the thicket neare
A cruell shaft, headed with deadly ill, 180
And fettered with an vnlucky quill ;
The wicked steele stayd not, till it did light
In his left thigh, and deepely did it thrill :

l. 164, '*foorth*' : l. 169, '*despite*' : l. 170, '*habericon*' : l. 172, '*now*'
[*sic*] : l. 178, , for ; .

Exceeding grieve that wound in him empight,
But more that with his foes he could not come to fight. /

At laft through wrath and vengeance making way,
He on the bancke arriu'd with mickle paine,
Where the third brother him did fore affay,
And droue at him with all his might and maine
A forreft bill, which both his hands did straine ; 190
But warily he did auoide the blow,
And with his speare requited him againe,
That both his fides were thrilled with the throw,
And a large freame of bloud out of the wound did flow.

He tombling downe, with gnashing teeth did bite
The bitter earth, and bad to let him in
Into the balefull house of endleffe night,
Where wicked ghosts do waile their former fin.
Tho gan the battell freshly to begin ;
For nathemore for that spectacle bad, 200
Did th'other two their cruell vengeance blin,
But both attonce on both fides him beftad,
And load vpon him layd, his life for to haue had.

Tho when that villain he auiz'd, which late
Affrighted had the faireft *Florimell*,
Full of fiers fury, and indignant hate,
To him he turned, and with rigour fell
Smote him fo rudely on the Pannikell,
That to the chin he cleft his head in twaine :
Downe on the ground his carkas groueling fell ; 210

L 186, p. '468' is mispaged '478' : l. 187, 'arryud . . . payne,' and so
'y' for 'i' in the stanza's rhyme-words : l. 189, 'droue' : l. 190, 'foreft' :
l. 194, 'flood' [sic] : l. 199, 'battaile' : l. 204, 'villayn' : l. 207, 'rigor.'

His finfull foule with desperate disdaine,
Out of her fleshly ferme fled to the place of paine.

That seeing now the onely last of three,
Who with that wicked shaft him wounded had,
Trembling with horror, as that did foresee
The fearefull end of his auengement sad,
Through / which he follow should his brethren bad,
His bootelesse bow in feeble hand vpcought,
And therewith shot an arrow at the lad ;
Which faintly fluttring, scarce his helmet raught, 220
And glauncing fell to ground, but him annoyed naught.

With that he would haue fled into the wood ;
But *Timias* him lightly ouerhent,
Right as he entring was into the flood,
And strooke at him with force so violent,
That headlesse him into the foord he sent :
The carkas with the streame was carried downe,
But th'head fell backward on the Continent.
So mischief fel vpon the meaners crowne ; (renowne.
They three be dead with shame, the Squire liues with

He liues, but takes small ioy of his renowne ; 231
For of that cruell wound he bled so fore,
That from his steed he fell in deadly swowne ;
Yet still the bloud forth gusht in so great store,
That he lay wallowd all in his owne gore.
Now God thee keepe, thou gentlest Squire aliuie,
Else shall thy louing Lord thee see no more,

l. 211, 'foule': l. 213, 'only': l. 214, 'shafte': l. 215, 'horror': l. 219,
'shott': l. 220, 'fayntly': l. 227, 'carcas': l. 234, 'blood': l. 236, 'squire':
l. 237, 'Els.'

But both of comfort him thou shalt depriue,
And eke thy selfe of honour, which thou didst atchiue.

Providence heauenly passeth liuing thought, 240
And doth for wretched mens reliefe make way ;
For loe great grace or fortune thither brought
Comfort to him, that comfortlesse now lay.
In those fame woods, ye well remember may,
How that a noble huntresse did wonne,
She, that base *Braggadocchio* did affray,
And made him fast out of the Forrest runne ;
Belphebe was her name, as faire as *Phæbus* funne. /

She on a day, as she purfewd the chace
Of some wild beast, which with her arrowes keene 250
She wounded had, the same along did trace
By tract of blood, which she had freshly seene,
To haue besprinkled all the grassy greene ;
By the great perdue, which she there perceau'd,
Well hoped she the beast engor'd had beene,
And made more hast, the life to haue bereau'd :
But ah, her expectation greatly was deceau'd.

Shortly she came, whereas that woefull Squire
With blood deformed, lay in deadly fownd :
In whose faire eyes, like lamps of quenched fire, 260
The Christall humour stood congealed rownd ;
His locks, like faded leaues fallen to grownd,
Knotted with blood, in bounces rudely ran,
And his sweete lips, on which before that stownd

l. 239, 'honor': l. 240, 'heuenly': l. 242, 'thether': l. 246, 'Shee':
l. 247, 'forest rounne': l. 250, 'wilde': l. 252, 'blood,' and so ll. 259 and
263: l. 255, 'shee': l. 256, 'haste': l. 261, 'humor.'

The bud of youth to bloffome faire began,
Spoild of their rofie red, were woxen pale and wan.

Saw neuer liuing eye more heauy fight,
That could haue made a rocke of stone to rew,
Or riue in twaine : which when that Lady bright
Besides all hope with melting eyes did vew, 270
All fuddeinly abasht she chaunged hew,
And with sterne horror backward gan to start :
But when she better him beheld, she grew
Full of soft passion and vnwonted smart :
The point of pittie perced through her tender hart.

Meekely she bowed downe, to weete if life
Yet in his frofen members did remaine,
And feeling by his pulfes beating rife,
That the weake foule her feat did yet retaine,
She / cast to comfort him with bufie paine : 280
His double folded necke she reard vpight,
And rubd his temples, and each trembling vaine ;
His mayled habericon she did vndight,
And from his head his heauy burganet did light.

Into the woods thenceforth in haft she went,
To seeke for hearbes, that mote him remedy ;
For she of hearbes had great intendiment,
Taught of the Nymphe, which from her infancy
Her nourced had in trew Nobility :

l. 266, 'refy': l. 267, 'cie': l. 270, 'cies': l. 271, 'fhee,' and so ll. 273 (bis) and 276: l. 272, 'horror': l. 273, 'bitter' [sic]: l. 277, 'Yett,' and so l. 279: l. 279, 'foule': l. 280, 'bufy': l. 283, 'habericon,' as before: l. 285, 'hafte fhee,' and 'fhee' in ll. 287, 295, and 299: l. 287, 'herbes.'

There, whether it diuine *Tobacco* were, 290
 Or *Panachæa*, or *Polygony*,
 She found, and brought it to her patient deare
 Who al this while lay bleeding out his hart-bloud neare.

The foueraigne weede betwixt two marbles plaine
 She pownded small, and did in peeces bruze,
 And them atweene her lilly handes twaine,
 Into his wound the iuyce thereof did scruze,
 And round about, as she could well it vze,
 The flesh therewith she suppled and did steepe,
 T'abate all spasme, and soke the swelling bruze, 300
 And after hauing searcht the intuse deepe,
 She with her scarfe did bind the wound frō cold to keepe.

By this he had sweet life recur'd againe,
 And groning inly deepe, at last his eyes,
 His watry eyes, drizling like dewy raine,
 He vp gan lift toward the azure skies,
 From whence descend all hopelesse remedies :
 Therewith he sigh'd, and turning him aside,
 The goodly Mayd full of diuinities,
 And gifts of heauenly grace he by him spide, 310
 Her bow and gilden quiuer lying him beside. /

Mercy deare Lord (said he) what grace is this,
 That thou hast shewed to me finfull wight,
 To send thine Angell from her bowre of blis,
 To comfort me in my distressed plight ?

l. 290, 'yt': l. 292, 'found': l. 293, 'bleding . . . hart-blood': l. 294, 'foueraigne': l. 297, 'iuyce': l. 302, 'scarf . . . wound': l. 303, 'agayne,' and so 'y' for 'i' in the stanza's rhyme-words: l. 304, 'ies,' and so l. 305: l. 309, 'Maide.'

Angell, or Goddesse do I call thee right ?
 What seruice may I do vnto thee meete,
 That hast from darkenesse me returnd to light,
 And with thy heauenly salues and med'cines sweete,
 Hast drest my sinfull wounds ? I kisse thy blessed feete.

Thereat she blushing said, Ah gentle Squire, 321
 Nor Goddesse I, nor Angell, but the Mayd,
 And daughter of a woody Nympe, desire
 No seruice, butthy safety and ayd ;
 Which if thou gaine, I shalbe well apayd.
 We mortall wights, whose liues and fortunes bee
 To commun accidents still open layd,
 Are bound with commun bond of frailtee,
 To succour wretched wights, whom we captiued see.

By this her Damzels, which the former chace 330
 Had vndertaken after her arriu'd,
 As did *Belphebe*, in the bloody place,
 And thereby deemd the beast had bene depriu'd
 Of life, whom late their Ladies arrow ryu'd :
 For thy, the bloody tract they follow fast,
 And euery one to runne the swiftest stryu'd ;
 But two of them the rest far ouerpast,
 And where their Lady was, arriued at the last.

Where when they saw that goodly boy, with blood
 Defowled, and their Lady dresse his wownd, 340

l. 316, 'doe,' and so l. 317 ; l. 318, 'darknes' : l. 319, 'heuenly' : l. 324,
 , for ; : l. 326, 'Wee' : l. 327, 'stil' : l. 328, 'bound' : l. 329, 'succor' :
 l. 331, 'arryu'd' : l. 332—Collier suggests 'had' for 'did' : *ib.*, 'bloody,'
 and so l. 335 : l. 334, 'ladies' : l. 335, 'followd' : *ib.*, , after 'thy'
 inserted : l. 336, 'ronne.'

They wondred much, and shortly vnderstood,
 How him in deadly case their Lady fownd,
 And / refkewed out of the heauy fownd.
 Eftfoones his warlike courser, which was strayd
 Farre in the woods, whiles that he lay in fownd,
 She made thofe Damzels fearch, which being stayd,
 They did him fet thereon, and forthwith them conuayd.

Into that forest farre they thence him led,
 Where was their dwelling, in a pleafant glade,
 With mountaines round about enuironed, 350
 And mighty woods, which did the valley shade,
 And like a ftately Theatre it made,
 Spreading it felfe into a fpacious plaine.
 And in the midft a little riuer plaide
 Emongft the pumy ftones, which feemd to plaine
 With gentle murmure, that his courfe they did reftaine

Befide the fame a dainty place there lay,
 Planted with mirtle trees and laurels greene,
 In which the birds fong many a louely lay
 Of gods high prayfe, and of their loues sweet teene,
 As it an earthly Paradize had beene : 361
 In whose enclosed shadow there was pight
 A faire Pauilion, fcarcely to be feene,
 The which was all within moft richly dight,
 That greateft Princes liuing it mote well delight.

Thither they brought that wounded Squire, and layd
 In eafie couch his feeble limbes to reft,

l. 342, 'theyr': l. 345, 'woodes,' and so l. 351 : l. 350, 'round': l. 351,
 'mightie': l. 356, 'gelle . . . their courf': l. 358, 'laurells': l. 360,
 'praise': *ib.*, 'sweet loues': l. 364, 'al': l. 365, 'liking': l. 366, 'Thether
 . . . Squire.'

He rested him a while, and then the Mayd
 His ready wound with better salues new drest ;
 Dayly she dressed him, and did the best 370
 His grievous hurt to garish, that she might,
 That shortly she his dolour hath redrest,
 And his foule fore reduced to faire plight :
 It she reduced, but himselfe destroyed quight. /

O foolith Phyfick, and vnfruitfull paine,
 That heales vp one and makes another wound :
 She his hurt thigh to him recur'd againe,
 But hurt his hart, the which before was found,
 Through an vnwary dart, which did rebound
 From her faire eyes and gracious countenance. 380
 What bootes it him from death to be vnbound,
 To be captiued in endlesse duraunce
 Of forrow and despaire without aleggeaunce ?

Still as his wound did gather, and grow hole,
 So still his hart woxe fore, and health decayd :
 Madnesse to saue a part, and lose the whole.
 Still whenas he beheld the heauenly Mayd,
 Whiles dayly plaisters to his wound she layd,
 So still his Malady the more increast,
 The whiles her matchlesse beautie him dismayd. 390
 Ah God, what other could he do at least,
 But loue so faire a Lady, that his life releast ?

Long while he stroue in his courageous brest,
 With reason dew the passion to subdew,

l. 369, 'readie': l. 370, 'Daily': l. 371, 'guarish': l. 375, 'phyfick':
 l. 377, 'recurd': l. 379, 'rebound,' and so 'w' in l. 381: l. 383, 'despayre':
 l. 388, 'playsters . . . wound': l. 391, 'doe': l. 392, 'fayre': l. 393,
 'courageous.'

And loue for to dislodge out of his nest :
 Still when her excellencies he did vew,
 Her foueraigne bounty, and celestiall hew,
 The fame to loue he strongly was constraind :
 But when his meane estate he did reuew,
 He from such hardy boldnesse was restraind, 400
 And of his lucklesse lot and cruell loue thus plained.

Vnthankfull wretch (said he) is this the meed,
 With which her foueraigne mercy thou doest quight ?
 Thy life she saued by her gracious deed,
 But thou doest weene with villeinous despight,
 To / blot her honour, and her heauenly light.
 Dye rather, dye, then so disloyally
 Deeme of her high desert, or seeme so light :
 Faire death it is to shonne more shame, to dy :
 Dye rather, dy, then euer loue disloyally. 410

But if to loue disloyalty it bee,
 Shall I then hate her, that from deathes dore
 Me brought ? ah farre be such reproch fro mee.
 What can I lesse do, then her loue therefore,
 Sith I her dew reward cannot restore :
 Dye rather, dye, and dying do her serue,
 Dying her serue, and liuing her adore ;
 Thy life she gaue, thy life she doth deferue :
 Dye rather, dye, then euer from her seruice swerue.

But foolish boy, what bootes thy seruice bace 420
 To her, to whom the heauens do serue and few ?

l. 397, '*foueraigne bounty*'—Collier suggests '*beautie*': l. 398, '*constraynd*': l. 399, '*reuew*' misprinted '*renew*' in '96: l. 400, '*restraynd*,' and so '*y*' for '*i*' in l. 401: l. 401, '*lott*': l. 403, '*foueraign*': l. 404, '*gratious*': l. 406, '*blott*': l. 409, '*Fayre*': l. 414, '*doe*,' and so l. 421, '*heuens*.'

Thou a meane Squire, of meeke and lowly place,
 She heauenly borne, and of celestiall hew.
 How then? of all loue taketh equall vew :
 And doth not highest God vouchsafe to take
 The loue and seruice of the basest crew?
 If she will not, dye meekly for her sake ;
 Dye rather, dye, then euer so faire loue forsake.

Thus warreid he long time against his will,
 Till that through weaknesse he was forst at last, 430
 To yield himselfe vnto the mighty ill :
 Which as a victour proud, gan ranfack fast
 His inward parts, and all his entrayles waft,
 That neither bloud in face, nor life in hart
 It left, but both did quite drye vp, and blaft ;
 As percing leuin, which the inner part
 Of euery thing confumes, and calcineth by art. /

Which seeing faire *Belphebe*, gan to feare,
 Least that his wound were inly well not healed,
 Or that the wicked steele empoysned were : 440
 Little she weend, that loue he clofe concealed ;
 Yet still he wasted, as the snow congealed,
 When the bright sunne his beams thereon doth beat;
 Yet neuer he his hart to her reuealed,
 But rather chose to dye for sorrow great,
 Then with dishonorable termes her to entreat.

She gracious Lady, yet no paines did spare,
 To do him ease, or do him remedy :

l. 422, 'Squyre': l. 423, 'heuenly': l. 431, 'mightie': l. 433, 'partes':
 l. 434, 'blood': l. 438, 'fayre': l. 439, 'heald,' and so 'd' for 'ed' in
 rhyme-words of the stanza: l. 448, 'doe' (*bis*).

Many Restoratiues of vertues rare,
 And costlly Cordialles she did apply, 450
 To mitigate his stubborne mallady :
 But that sweet Cordiall, which can restore
 A loue-sick hart, she did to him enuy ;
 To him, and to all th'vnworthy world forlore
 She did enuy that soueraigne value, in secreet store.

That dainty Rose, the daughter of her Morne,
 More deare then life she tendered, whose flowre
 The girlond of her honour did adorne :
 Ne suffred she the Middayes scorching powre,
 Ne the sharp Northerne wind thereon to showre, 460
 But lapped vp her filken leaues most chaire,
 When so the froward skye began to lowre :
 But soone as calmed was the Chrifall aire,
 She did it faire dispred, and let to florish faire.

Eternall God in his almighty powre,
 To make enfample of his heauenly grace,
 In Paradize whilome did plant this flowre,
 Whence he it fetcht out of her natieue place,
 And / did in stocke of earthly flesh enrace,
 That mortall men her glory should admire 470
 In gentle Ladies brest, and bounteous race
 Of woman kind it fairest flowre doth spire,
 And beareth fruit of honour and all chafft desire.

Faire ympes of beautie, whose bright shining beames
 Adorne the world with like to heauenly light,

l. 451, '*malady*': l. 454—in 1609 '*to*' is omitted: l. 455, '*soueraigne*':
 l. 456, '*daintie*': l. 461, '*chayre*,' and so '*y*' for '*i*' in rhyme-words of the
 stanza: l. 463, '*chrisfall*': l. 464, '*fayre*' (*bis*): *ib.*, '*let to*' is in 1611
 '*let it*': l. 465, '*almightie*': l. 467, '*whylome*': l. 470, '*admyre*,' and so
 '*y*' for '*i*' in rhyme-words of the stanza: l. 472, '*fayrefl*.'

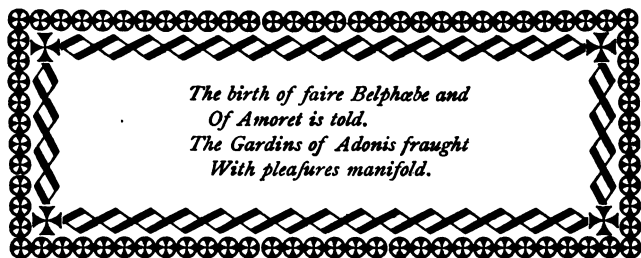
And to your willes both royalties and Realmes
 Subdew, through conquest of your wondrous might,
 With this faire flowre your goodly girlonds dight,
 Of chastity and vertue virginall,
 That shall embellish more your beautie bright, 480
 And crowne your heades with heauenly coronall,
 Such as the Angels weare before Gods tribunall.

To your faire selues a faire ensample frame,
 Of this faire virgin, this *Belphebe* faire,
 To whom in perfect loue, and spotlesse fame,
 Of chastitie, none liuing may compaire :
 Ne poyfnous Enuy iustly can empaire
 The prayse of her fresh flowring Maidenhead ;
 For thy, she standeth on the highest staire
 Of th'honorable stage of womanhead, 490
 That Ladies all may follow her ensample dead.

In so great prayse of stedfast chastity,
 Nathlesse she was so curteous and kind,
 Tempred with grace, and goodly modesty,
 That seemed those two vertues stroue to find
 The higher place in her Heroick mind :
 So struiuing each did other more augment,
 And both encreast the prayse of woman kind,
 And both encreast her beautie excellent ;
 So all did make in her a perfect complement. / 500

l. 476, 'Reames' : l. 477, 'cōquest' : l. 478, 'fayre,' and so last word in l. 484, and 'y' for 'i' in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 482, 'were'—Dr. Morris cites 'weare' as from 1609, but it is derived from 1596, *ut supra* : l. 488, 'Maydenhead' : l. 489, , after 'thy' inserted : l. 493, 'courteous . . . kynde,' and 'kynde' l. 498, and so 'y' for 'i' in rhyme-words of the stanza.

Cant. VI.



VVell may I weene, faire Ladies, all this while
 Ye wonder, how this noble Damozell
 So great perfections did in her compile,
 Sith that in saluage forest she did dwell,
 So farre from court and royall Citadell, 10
 The great schoolmistresse of all curtesy :
 Seemeth that such wild woods should far expell
 All ciuill vfage and gentility,
 And gentle sprite deforme with rude rusticity.

But to this faire *Belphebe* in her berth
 The heauens so fauourable were and free,
 Looking with myld aspect vpon the earth,
 In th'*Horoscope* of her natiuitee,
 That all the gifts of grace and chastitee
 On her they poured forth of plenteous horne ; 20
Ioue laught on *Venus* from his soueraigne see,
 And *Phæbus* with faire beames did her adorne,
 And all the *Graces* rockt her cradle being borne.

1. 2, 'fayre Belphebe': 1. 3, 'Amoret': 1. 11, 'courtesy': 1. 12, 'wilde woodes': 1. 13, 'ciuile': 1. 16, 'heuens . . . fauorable': 1. 21, 'foucrayne.

Her berth was of the wombe of Morning dew,
 And her conception of the ioyous Prime,
 And all her whole creation did her shew
 Pure and vnspotted from all loathly crime,
 That / is ingenerate in fleshy slime.
 So was this virgin borne, so was she bred,
 So was she trayned vp from time to time, 30
 In all chaste vertue, and true bounti-hed
 Till to her dew perfection she was ripened.

Her mother was the faire *Chryfogonee*,
 The daughter of *Amphis*, who by race
 A Faerie was, yborne of high degree,
 She bore *Belphebe*, she bore in like cace
 Faire *Amoretta* in the second place :
 These two were twinnes, & twixt them two did share
 The heritage of all celestiall grace.
 That all the rest it seem'd they robbed bare 40
 Of bountie, and of beautie, and all vertues rare.

It were a goodly storie, to declare,
 By what straunge accident faire *Chryfogone*
 Conceiu'd these infants, and how them she bare,
 In this wild forrest wandering all alone,
 After she had nine moneths fulfilled and gone :
 For not as other wemens commune brood,
 They were enwombed in the sacred throne
 Of her chaste bodie, nor with commune food,
 As other wemens babes, they sucked vitall blood. 50

l. 31, 'chaste': l. 32, 'were': l. 37, 'Fayre': l. 40, 'second': l. 41, 'bountie': l. 44, 'bore.'

But wondrously they were begot, and bred
 Through influence of th'heauens fruitfull ray,
 As it in antique bookes is mentioned.
 It was vpon a Sommers shynie day,
 When *Titan* faire his beames did display,
 In a fresh fountaine, farre from all mens vew,
 She bath'd her brest, the boyling heat t'allay ;
 She bath'd with roses red, and violets blew,
 And all the sweetest flowres, that in the forrest grew. /

Till faint through irkesome wearineffe, adowne 60
 Vpon the grassie ground her selfe she layd
 To sleepe, the whiles a gentle slombring frowne
 Vpon her fell all naked bare displayd ;
 The sunne-beames bright vpon her body playd,
 Being through former bathing mollifide,
 And pierst into her wombe, where they embayd
 With so sweet sence and secret power vnspide,
 That in her pregnant flesh they shortly fructifide.

Miraculous may seeme to him, that reads
 So straunge ensample of conception ; 70
 But reason teacheth that the fruitfull seades
 Of all things liuing, through impreffion
 Of the sunbeames in moyft complexion,
 Doe life conceiue and quickned are by kynd :
 So after *Nilus* invndation,
 Infinite shapes of creatures men do fynd,
 Informed in the mud, on which the Sunne hath shynd.

l. 52, 'heuens': l. 54, 'shinie': l. 55—1609 has 'his hot beames' for 'beames'=beames: l. 56, 'far': l. 60, 'yrkesome wearines': l. 61, 'grassy': l. 64, 'sunbeames': l. 70, , for ; : l. 76, 'creatures' is misprinted 'creature' in '96: *ib.*, 'doe.'

Great father he of generation
 Is rightly cald, th'author of life and light ;
 And his faire sifter for creation 80
 Ministreth matter fit, which tempred right
 With heate and humour, breeds the liuing wight.
 So sprong these twinnes in wombe of *Chryfogone*,
 Yet wist she nought thereof, but fore affright,
 Wondred to see her belly so vpblone,
 Which still increast, till she her terme had full outgone.

Whereof conceiuing shame and foule disgrace,
 Albe her guiltlesse conscience her cleard,
 She fled into the wildernesse a space,
 Till that vnweeldly burden she had reard, 90
 And / shund dishonor, which as death she feard :
 Where wearie of long trauell, downe to rest
 Her selfe she set, and comfortably cheard ;
 There a sad cloud of sleepe her ouerkeft,
 And seized euery sence with sorrow fore opprest.

It fortun'd, faire *Venus* hauing loft
 Her little sonne, the winged god of loue,
 Who for some light displeasure, which him crost,
 Was from her fled, as flit as ayerie Doue,
 And left her blisfull bowre of ioy aboue, 100
 (So from her often he had fled away,
 When she for ought him sharpely did reprove,
 And wandred in the world in strange aray,
 Disguiz'd in thousand shapes, that none might him be-
 wray.

l. 79, 'author': l. 83, 'womb': l. 92, 'trauail': l. 95, 'sence':
 l. 99, 'ayery': l. 103, 'straunge.'

Him for to seeke, she left her heavenly hous,
 The houle of goodly formes and faire aspects,
 Whence all the world deriues the glorious
 Features of beautie, and all shapcs seleet,
 With which high God his workmanship hath deckt ;
 And searched euery way, through which his wings
 Had borne him, or his tract she mote detect : 111
 She promist kisses sweet, and sweeter things
 Vnto the man, that of him tydings to her brings.

Firft she him fought in Court, where most he vsed
 Whylome to haunt, but there she found him not ;
 But many there she found, which fore accused
 His falsehood, and with foule infamous blot
 His cruell deedes and wicked wyles did spot :
 Ladies and Lords she euery where mote heare
 Complayning, how with his empoysned shot 120
 Their wofull harts he wounded had whyleare,
 And so had left them languishing twixt hope and feare./

She then the Citties fought from gate to gate,
 And euery one did aske, did he him see ;
 And euery one her answerd, that too late.
 He had him seene, and felt the crueltie
 Of his sharpe darts and whot artillerie ;
 And euery one threw forth reproches rise
 Of his mischieuous deedes, and said, That hee
 Was the disturber of all ciuill life, 130
 The enemy of peace, and author of all strife.

l. 106, '*aspects*'—another example of Spenser's neglect of exact rhymes :
 l. 108, '*beautie*' is misprinted '*beauties*' in '96 : l. 110, '*euerie*' : l. 114,
 '*v/d*,' and so '*d*' for '*ed*' in l. 116 : l. 117, '*falsehood . . . foule*' : l. 124,
 '*euerie*,' and so l. 125 : l. 126, '*cruelltee*,' and so '*ee*' for '*ie*' in l. 127 :
 l. 127, '*dartes*' : l. 129, '*sayd*' : l. 131, '*authour*.'

Then in the countrey she abroad him fought,
 And in the rurall cottages inquired,
 Where also many plaints to her were brought,
 How he their heedlesse harts with loue had fyred,
 And his false venim through their veines inspyred ;
 And eke the gentle shepheard swaynes, which fat
 Keeping their fleecie flockes, as they were hyred,
 She sweetly heard complaine, both how and what
 Her sonne had to them doen ; yet she did smile thereat.

But when in none of all these she him got, 141
 She gan auize, where else he mote him hyde :
 At last she her bethought, that she had not
 Yet sought the saluage woods and forrests wyde,
 In which full many louely Nymphes abyde,
 Mongst whom might be, that he did closely lye,
 Or that the loue of some of them him tyde :
 For thy, she thither cast her course t'apply,
 To search the secret haunts of *Dianes* company.

Shortly vnto the wastefull woods she came, 150
 Whereas she found the Goddesse with her crew,
 After late chace of their embrewed game,
 Sitting beside a fountaine in a rew,
 Some / of them washing with the liquid dew
 From off their dainty limbes the dustie sweat,
 And soyle which did deforme their liuely hew ;
 Others lay shaded from the scorching heat ;
 The rest vpon her person gaue attendance great.

- l. 133, '*inquir'd*,' and so '*d*' for '*ed*' in rhyme-words of the stanza :
 l. 134, '*plaines*': l. 137, '*Shepheard*': l. 138, '*fleecy . . . kyr'd*':
 l. 142, '*els*': l. 144, '*forests*': l. 148, , after '*thy*' inserted: *ib.*, '*thether*':
 l. 155, '*of . . . limbs . . . dusty*': l. 157, , for ; .

She hauing hong vpon a bough on high
 Her bow and painted quiuer, had vnlaste 160
 Her siluer buskins from her nimble thigh,
 And her lancke loynes vngirt, and brefts vnbrafte,
 After her heat the breathing cold to taste ;
 Her golden lockes, that late in tresses bright
 Embreaded were for hindring of her haste,
 Now loofe about her shoulders hong vndight,
 And were with sweet *Ambrosia* all besprinckled light.

Soone as she *Venus* saw behind her backe,
 She was asham'd to be so loofe surprized
 And woxe halfe wroth against her damzels slacke,
 That had not her thereof before auized, 171
 But suffred her so carelesly disguized
 Be ouertaken. Soone her garments loofe
 Vpgath'ring, in her bosome she comprized,
 Well as she might, and to the Goddesse rose,
 Whiles all her Nymphes did like a girlond her enclose.

Goodly she gan faire *Cytherea* greet,
 And shortly asked her, what cause her brought
 Into that wildernesse for her vnmeet, (fraught :
 From her sweete bowres, and beds with pleasures
 That suddein change she strange aduenture thought.
 To whom halfe weeping, she thus answered, 182
 That she her dearest sonne *Cupido* fought,
 Who in his frowardnesse from her was fled ;
 That she repented fore, to haue him angered. /

l. 162, 'lanck': l. 168, 'behinde': l. 169, 'surpriz'd,' and so ''d' for
 'ed' in rhyme-words of the stanza: l. 181, 'chaung . . . straung': l. 184,
 'frowardnes.'

Thereat *Diana* gan to smile, in scorne
 Of her vaine plaint, and to her scoffing sayd ;
 Great pittie sure, that ye be so forlorne
 Of your gay sonne, that giues ye so good ayd
 To your disports : ill mote ye bene apayd. 190
 But she was more engrieued, and replide ;
 Faire sifter, ill beseemes it to vpbrayd
 A dolefull heart with so disdainefull pride ;
 The like that mine, may be your paine another tide.

As you in woods and wanton wildernesse
 • Your glory set, to chace the saluage beafts,
 So my delight is all in ioyfulnesse,
 In beds, in bowres, in banckets, and in feasts :
 And ill becomes you with your loftie creasts,
 To scorne the ioy, that *Ioue* is glad to feeke ; 200
 We both are bound to follow heauens beheasts,
 And tend our charges with obeisance meeke :
 Spare, gentle sifter, with reproch my paine to eeke.

And tell me, if that ye my sonne haue heard,
 To lurke emongst your Nymphes in secret wize ;
 Or keepe their cabins : much I am affeard,
 Least he like one of them him selfe disguize,
 And turne his arrowes to their exercize :
 So may he long himselfe full easie hide :
 For he is faire and fresh in face and guise, 210
 As any Nymph (let not it be enuyde,)
 So saying euery Nymph full narrowly she eyde.

l. 187, 'playnt' : l. 188, 'pitty' : l. 196, 'sett' : l. 199, 'lofty' : l. 201, 'bound' : l. 202, 'obeisance' : l. 209, 'him selfe' : l. 211, 'Nimphe . . . enuide' : l. 212, 'Nimph . . . shee eide.'

But *Phœbe* therewith fore was angered,
 And sharply said ; Goe Dame, goe seeke your boy,
 Where you him lately left, in *Mars* his bed ;
 He comes not here, we scorne his foolish ioy,
 Ne / lend we leisure to his idle toy :
 But if I catch him in this company,
 By *Stygian* lake I vow, whose sad annoy
 The Gods doe dread, he dearly shall aby : 220
 Ile clip his wanton wings, that he no more shall fly.

Whom when as *Venus* saw so fore displeased,
 She inly fory was, and gan relent,
 What she had said : so her she soone appeased,
 With sugred words and gentle blandishment,
 From which a fountaine from her sweet lips went,
 And welled goodly forth, that in short space
 She was well pleasd, and forth her damzels sent,
 Through all the woods, to search from place to place,
 If any tract of him or tydings they mote trace. 230

To search the God of loue, her Nymphes she sent
 Throughout the wandring forrest euery where :
 And after them her selfe eke with her went
 To seeke the fugitiue, both farre and nere,
 So long they fought, till they arriued were
 In that same shadie couert, where as lay
 Faire *Cryfogone* in slombry traunce whilere :

l. 214, 'faide' : l. 215, 'leste' : l. 220, 'dearly' : l. 221, 'flye' : l. 222, 'displeasid,' and so 'd' for 'ed' in l. 224 : l. 223, 'Shee,' and so l. 224 : l. 226, 'From which' is in 1609 'Which as.' Dr. Morris notes that Church proposed 'Of which' : *ib.*, 'sweete' : l. 229, 'frö' : l. 230. 'tidings' : l. 231, 'Nymphes' : l. 232, 'forest' : l. 235, 'both farre and nere' not in '90, and a period (.) after 'fugitiue' : l. 236, 'shady.'

Who in her sleepe (a wondrous thing to say)
Vnwares had borne two babes, as faire as springing day.

Vnwares she them conceiu'd, vnwares she bore : 240
She bore withouten paine, that she conceiued
Withouten pleasure : ne her need implore
Lucinaes aide : which when they both perceiued,
They were through wonder nigh of sense bereaued,
And gazing each on other, nought bespake :
At last they both agreed, her seeming griued
Out of her heauy fwowne not to awake,
But from her louing fide the tender babes to take. /

Vp they them tooke, each one a babe vptooke,
And with them carried, to be fostered ; 250
Dame *Phœbe* to a Nymph her babe betooke,
To be vpbrought in perfect Maydenhed,
And of her selfe her name *Belphebe* red :
But *Venus* hers hence farre away conuayd,
To be vpbrought in goodly womanhed,
And in her litle loues stead, which was strayd,
Her *Amoretta* cald, to comfort her dismayd.

She brought her to her ioyous Paradize,
Where most she wonnes, whẽ she on earth does dwell.
So faire a place, as Nature can deuize : 260
Whether in *Paphos*, or *Cytheron* hill,
Or it in *Gnidus* be, I wote not well ;
But well I wote by tryall, that this fame
All other pleasant places doth excell,

l. 241, 'conceiu'd,' and so 'd' for 'ed' in rhyme-words of the stanza :
l. 244, 'sence bereu'd' : l. 247, 'heauie' : l. 251, 'Nymphe' : l. 254, 'thence
far,' and so l. 266 : l. 258, 'Shee' : l. 259, 'dwell' : l. 262, 'Gnidus . . .
bee' : l. 263, 'triall' : l. 264, 'pleasaunt.'

And called is by her loft louers name,
The *Gardin* of *Adonis*, farre renowmd by fame.

In that fame Gardin all the goodly flowres,
Wherewith dame Nature doth her beautifie,
And decks the girlonds of her paramoures,
Are fetcht : there is the first feminarie 270
Of all things, that are borne to liue and die,
According to their kindes. Long worke it were,
Here to account the endlesse progenie
Of all the weedes, that bud and blossome there ;
But so much as doth need, must needs be counted here.

It fited was in fruitfull foyle of old,
And girt in with two walles on either side ;
The one of yron, the other of bright gold,
That none might thorough breake, nor ouer-stride :
And / double gates it had, which opened wide, 280
By which both in and out men moten pas ;
Th'one faire and fresh, the other old and dride :
Old *Genius* the porter of them was,
Old *Genius*, the which a double nature has.

He letteth in, he letteth out to wend,
All that to come into the world desire ;
A thoufand thoufand naked babes attend
About him day and night, which doe require,
That he with fleshly weedes would them attire :
Such as him lift, such as eternall fate 290
Ordained hath, he clothes with sinfull mire,

l. 268, '*beautify*': l. 269, '*Paramoures*': l. 270, '*feminary*': l. 271, '*dye*': l. 272, '*kynds*': l. 273, '*progeny*': l. 274, '*weed*': l. 277, '*walls*': l. 289, '*weeds*.'

And fendeth forth to liue in mortall state,
Till they againe returne backe by the hinder gate.

After that they againe returned beene,
They in that Gardin planted be againe ;
And grow afresh, as they had neuer seene
Fleshly corruption, nor mortall paine.
Some thousand yeares so doen they there remaine ;
And then of him are clad with other hew,
Or sent into the chaungefull world againe, 300
Till thither they returne, where first they grew :
So like a wheele around they runne from old to new.

Ne needs there Gardiner to fet, or fow,
To plant or prune : for of their owne accord
All things, as they created were, doe grow,
And yet remember well the mightie word,
Which first was spoken by th'Almightie lord,
That bad them to increase and multiply :
Ne doe they need with water of the ford,
Or of the clouds to moysten their roots dry ; 310
For in themselfes eternall moisture they imply. /

Infinite shapcs of creatures there are bred,
And vncouth formes, which none yet euer knew,
And euery fort is in a sundry bed
Set by it selfe, and ranckt in comely rew :
Some fit for reasonable soules t'indew,
Some made for beasts, some made for birds to weare,
And all the fruitfull spawne of fishes hew

l. 293, '*agayn*': l. 295, '*bee agayne*,' and so '*y*' for '*i*' in rhyme-words of the stanza: l. 298, misprinted '*remaire*' in '96: l. 301, '*thether . . . retourne*': l. 302, '*around . . . ronne*': l. 303, '*fett*': l. 304, '*or*' misprinted '*of*' in '96: l. 306, '*mighty*': l. 307, '*Almighty*': l. 314, '*sendry*': l. 315, '*fett*': l. 316, '*fitt . . . soules*.'

In endleffe rancks along enraunged were,
That seem'd the *Ocean* could not containe them there.

Daily they grow, and daily forth are sent 321
Into the world, it to replenish more ;
Yet is the stocke not lessened, nor spent,
But still remaines in euerlasting store,
As it at first created was of yore.
For in the wide wombe of the world there lyes,
In hatefull darkenesse and in deepe horrore,
An huge eternall *Chaos*, which supplyes
The substances of natures fruitfull progenyes.

All things from thence doe their first being fetch, 330
And borrow matter, whereof they are made,
Which when as forme and feature it does ketch,
Becomes a bodie, and doth then inuade
The state of life, out of the grievly shade.
That substance is eterne, and bideth so,
Ne when the life decayes, and forme does fade,
Doth it consume, and into nothing go,
But chaunged is, and often altred to and fro.

The substance is not chaunged, nor altered,
But th'only forme and outward fashion ; 340
For euery substance is conditioned
To change her hew, and sundry formes to don,
Meet / for her temper and complexion :
For formes are variable and decay,
By course of kind, and by occasion ;

l. 320, 'seemd': l. 322, , for ; : l. 327, 'darknes': l. 329, 'substaunces':
l. 332, 'whenas': l. 333, 'body': l. 335, 'substaunce,' and so ll. 339 and
341 : l. 337, 'goe': l. 338, 'fro': l. 342, 'chaunge . . . sondry': l. 345,
'kinde.'

And that faire flowre of beautie fades away,
As doth the lilly fresh before the sunny ray.

Great enemy to it, and to all the rest,
That in the *Gardin* of *Adonis* springs,
Is wicked *Time*, who with his scyth addrest, 350
Does mow the flowring herbes and goodly things,
And all their glory to the ground downe flings,
Where they do wither, and are fowly mard :
He flies about, and with his flaggy wings
Beates downe both leaues and buds without regard,
Ne cuer pittie may relent his malice hard.

Yet pittie often did the gods relent,
To see so faire things mard, and spoyled quight ;
And their great mother *Venus* did lament
The losse of her deare brood, her deare delight ; 360
Her hart was pierst with pittie at the sight,
When walking through the *Gardin*, them she spyde,
Yet no'te she find redresse for such despight.
For all that liues, is subiect to that law :
All things decay in time, and to their end do draw.

But were it not, that *Time* their troubler is,
All that in this delightfull *Gardin* growes,
Should happie be, and haue immortall blis :
For here all plentie, and all pleasure flowes,

l. 348, 'to' is dropped in 1611 : l. 350, 'Tyme' : l. 353, 'doe,' and so
l. 365 : l. 354, 'winges' : l. 356, 'pitty,' and so l. 357 : l. 358, 'things ...
spoiled' : l. 361, 'pitty' : l. 362, 'spyde'—sic '90 and '96, and all,—evi-
dently an oversight for 'faw,' but another example of Spenser's neglects :
l. 363, : for : l. 368, 'happy bee' : l. 369, 'plenty.'

And sweet loue gentle fits emongft them throwes, 370
 Without fell rancor, or fond gealofie ;
 Franckly each paramour his leman knowes,
 Each bird his mate, ne any does enuie
 Their goodly meriment, and gay felicitie. /

There is continuall fpring, and harueft there
 Continuall, both meeting at one time :
 For both the boughes doe laughing bloffomes beare,
 And with frefh colours decke the wanton Prime,
 And eke attonce the heauy trees they clime,
 Which feeme to labour vnder their fruits lode : 380
 The whiles the ioyous birdes make their pafstime
 Emongft the fhadie leaues, their sweet abode,
 And their true loues without fufpition tell abroad.

Right in the middeft of that Paradife,
 There flood a ftately Mount, on whose round top
 A gloomy groue of mirtle trees did rife,
 Whose fhadie boughes sharpe Steele did neuer lop,
 Nor wicked beafts their tender buds did crop,
 But like a girlond compaffed the hight, 389
 And from their fruitfull fides sweet gum did drop,
 That all the ground with precious deaw bedight,
 Threw forth moft dainty odours, & moft sweet delight.

And in the thickeft couert of that fhade,
 There was a pleafant arbour, not by art,

l. 370, '*sweete . . . fits*': l. 371, '*gealofy*': l. 372, '*Paramor*': l. 373, '*enuey*': l. 374, '*felicity*': l. 375, '*Spring*': l. 376, '*tyme*,' and so '*y*' for '*i*' in the stanza's rhyme-words: l. 377, '*bloffoms*': l. 379, '*heauenly*' [*sic*]: l. 380, '*fruite*s': l. 382, '*shady*': l. 387, '*shady . . . sharp*': l. 388, '*beaftes*': l. 390, '*fydes*': l. 391, '*pretious*': l. 394, '*pleafant Arber*.'

But of the trees owne inclination made,
 Which knitting their rancke braunches part to part,
 With wanton yuie twyne entrayld athwart,
 And Eglantine, and Caprifole emong,
 Fashiond aboue within their inmost part, 399
 That nether *Phæbus* beams could through thẽ throng,
 Nor *Aeolus* sharp blast could worke them any wrong.

And all about grew euery fort of flowre,
 To which sad louers were transformd of yore ;
 Fresh *Hyacinthus*, *Phæbus* paramoure,
 And dearest loue :
 Foolish *Narcisse*, that likes the watry shore,
 Sad / *Amaranthus*, made a flowre but late,
 Sad *Amaranthus*, in whose purple gore
 Me seemes I see *Amintas* wretched fate,
 To whom sweet Poets verse hath giuen endlesse date.

There wont faire *Venus* often to enioy 411
 Her deare *Adonis* ioyous company,
 And reape sweet pleasure of the wanton boy ;
 There yet, some say, in secret he does ly,
 Lapped in flowres and pretious spycery,
 By her hid from the world, and from the skill
 Of *Stygian* Gods, which doe her loue enuy ;
 But she her selfe, when euer that she will,
 Possesseth him, and of his sweetnesse takes her fill.

And sooth it seemes they say : for he may not 420
 For euer die, and euer buried bee

l 400, '*Phæbus* . . . *thrög*': l. 403, '*transformde*': l. 405, '*And dearest loue*'—this from 1609 does not occur in '90 or '96, and so leaves the stanza defective : yet another example of the Poet's neglects : l. 406, '*Marciſſe*'—*sic* : l. 411, '*fayre*' : l. 413, : for ; : l. 421, '*dye*.'

In balefull night, where all things are forgot ;
 All be he subiect to mortalitie,
 Yet is eterne in mutabilitie,
 And by succeffion made perpetuall,
 Transformed oft, and chaunged diuerflie :
 For him the Father of all formes they call ;
 Therefore needs mote he liue, that liuing giues to all.

There now he liueth in eternall blis,
 Ioying his goddesse, and of her enioyd : 430
 Ne feareth he henceforth that foe of his,
 Which with his cruell tuske him deadly cloyd :
 For that wilde Bore, the which him once annoyd,
 She firmly hath emprisoned for ay,
 That her sweet loue his malice mote auoyd,
 In a strong rocky Caue, which is they fay, (may.
 Hewen vnderneath that Mount, that none him losen /

There now he liues in euerlasting ioy,
 With many of the Gods in company,
 Which thither haunt, and with the winged boy 440
 Sporting himfelfe in safe felicity :
 Who when he hath with spoiles and cruelty
 Ranfackt the world, and in the wofull harts
 Of many wretches fet his triumphes hye,
 Thithier resorts, and laying his sad darts
 Aside, with faire *Adonis* playes his wanton parts.

And his true loue faire *Psyche* with him playes,
 Faire *Psyche* to him lately reconcyld,

l. 422, '*things*': l. 428, '*Therefore*': l. 440, '*thether*,' and so l. 445 :
 l. 441, '*him selfe*': l. 445, '*resortes . . . dartes*': l. 446, '*Afyde . . .*
partes': l. 447, '*trew*,' and so l. 460 : l. 448, '*Fayre*.'

After long troubles and vnmeet vpbrayes,
 With which his mother *Venus* her reuyld, 450
 And eke himselfe her cruelly exyld :
 But now in stedfast loue and happy state
 She with him liues, and hath him borne a chyld,
Pleasure, that doth both gods and men aggrate,
Pleasure, the daughter of *Cupid* and *Pfysche* late.

Hither great *Venus* brought this infant faire,
 The younger daughter of *Chrysogonee*,
 And vnto *Pfysche* with great trust and care
 Committed her, yfostered to bee, 460
 And trained vp in true feminitee :
 Who no lesse carefully her tendered,
 Then her owne daughter *Pleasure*, to whom shee
 Made her companion, and her leffoned
 In all the lore of loue, and goodly womanhead.

In which when she to perfect ripenesse grew,
 Of grace and beautie noble Paragone,
 She brought her forth into the worldes vew,
 To be th'ensample of true loue alone,
 And / Lodestarre of all chaste affectione, 470
 To all faire Ladies, that doe liue on ground.
 To Faery court she came, where many one
 Admyrd her goodly haueour, and found
 His feeble hart wide launched with loues cruell wound.

But she to none of them her loue did cast,
 Saue to the noble knight Sir *Scudamore*,

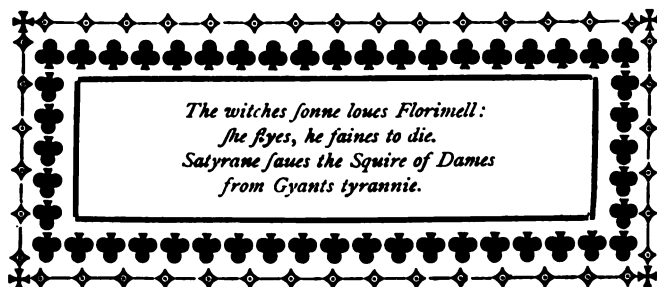
l. 456, 'Hether . . . fayre': l. 457, 'yonger': l. 465, 'ripenes': l. 469, 'affection': l. 470, 'fayre . . . ground,' and so 'w' for 'u' in ll. 472-3: . 473, 'launch . . . cruel'—in 1609 'launched.'

To whom her louing hart she linked fast
In faithfull loue, t'abide for euermore,
And for his dearest sake endured fore,
Sore trouble of an hainous enemy ;
Who her would forced haue to haue forlore 480
Her former loue, and stedfast loialty,
As ye may elsewhere read that ruefull history.

But well I weene, ye first desire to learne,
What end vnto that fearefull Damozell,
Which fled so fast from that same foster stearne,
Whom with his brethren *Timias* slew, befell :
That was to weet, the goodly *Florimell* ;
Who wandring for to seeke her louer deare,
Her louer deare, her dearest *Marinell*,
Into misfortune fell, as ye did heare, 490
And from Prince *Arthur* fled with wings of idle feare.

l. 477, 'faithful' in '90—misprinted 'fathful' in '96 : l. 482, 'reade' :
l. 485, 'fledde' : l. 487, , for ; : l. 491, 'Arthure.'

Cant. VII.



Like as an Hynd forth finged from the heard,
 That hath escaped from a rauenous beaft,
 Yet flies away of her owne feet affeard,
 And euery leafe, that shaketh with the leaft
 Murmure of winde, her terror hath encreast ; 10
 So fled faire *Florimell* from her vaine feare,
 Long after she from perill was releast :
 Each shade she saw, and each noyse she did heare,
 Did seeme to be the same, which she escaped whyleare.

All that same euening she in flying spent,
 And all that night her course continewd :
 Ne did she let dull sleepe once to relent,
 Nor wearinesse to slacke her hast, but fled

l. 3, 'She . . . dy' : l. 4, 'Squyre' : l. 5, 'Gynunt' [sic], and not
Gynant as Dr. Morris inadvertently records : l. 8, 'feete' : l. 11, 'fled
 fayre' : l. 13, 'he' (2nd) for 'she' in '90 : l. 14, 'whileare' : l. 18,
 'slack.'

Euer alike, as if her former dred
 Were hard behind, her readie to arrest : 20
 And her white Palfrey hauing conquered
 The maistring raines out of her weary wrest,
 Perforce her carried, where euer he thought best.

So long as breath, and hable puiffance
 Did natiue courage vnto him supply,
 His pace he freshly forward did aduaunce,
 And carried her beyond all ieopardy,
 But / nought that wanteth rest, can long aby.
 He hauing through incessant trauell spent
 His force, at last perforce a downe did ly, 30
 Ne foot could further moue : The Lady gent
 Thereat was suddein strooke with great astonishment.

And forst t'alight, on foot mote algates fare,
 A traeller vnwonted to such way :
 Need teacheth her this lesson hard and rare,
 That fortune all in equall launce doth sway,
 And mortall miseries doth make her play.
 So long she trauelled, till at length she came
 To an hilles side, which did to her bewray
 A little valley, subiect to the same, 40
 All couerd with thick woods, that quite it ouercame.

Through the tops of the high trees she did descry
 A litle smoke, whose vapour thin and light,
 Reeking aloft, vprolled to the sky :
 Which, chearefull signe did send vnto her sight,

L. 24, '*puiffaunce*' : l. 25, '*corage*' : l. 29, '*traueill*' : l. 32, '*strook*' :
 l. 34, '*traueiler*' : l. 38, '*traueild*' : l. 40, '*litle*' : l. 41, '*woodes*' : l. 42,
 '*th' tops*' 1609.

That in the same did wonne some liuing wight.
 Estfoones her steps she thereunto applyde,
 And came at last in weary wretched plight
 Vnto the place, to which her hope did guyde,
 To find some refuge there, and rest her weary fyde. 50

There in a gloomy hollow glen she found
 A little cottage, built of stickes and reedes
 In homely wize, and wald with fods around,
 In which a witch did dwell, in loathly weedes,
 And wilfull want, all carelesse of her needes ;
 So choosing solitarie to abide,
 Far from all neighbours, that her deuilish deedes
 And hellish arts from people she might hide,
 And hurt far off vnknowne, whom euer she enuide. /

The Damzell there arriuing entred in ; 60
 Where fitting on the flore the Hag she found,
 Busie (as seem'd) about some wicked gin :
 Who soone as she beheld that suddein stound,
 Lightly vpstart from the dustie ground,
 And with fell looke and hollow deadly gaze
 Stared on her awhile, as one astound, .
 Ne had one word to speake, for great amaze, (daze.
 But shewed by outward signes, that dread her sence did

At last turning her feare to foolish wrath,
 She askt, what deuill had her thither brought, 70
 And who she was, and what vnwonted path
 Had guided her, vnwelcomed, vnsought ?

l. 47, 'applyd': l. 50, 'finde . . . wearie': l. 59, 'enuide': l. 67,
 , for . —accepted: l. 70, 'thether': l. 72, . for ? .

To which the Damzell full of doubtfull thought,
Her mildly answer'd ; Beldame be not wroth
With filly Virgin by aduenture brought
Vnto your dwelling, ignorant and loth,
That craue but rowme to rest, while tempest ouerblo'th.

With that adowne out of her Chrifall eyne
Few trickling teares she softly forth let fall,
That like two Orient pearles, did purely shyne 80
Vpon her snowy cheeke ; and therewithall
She fighed soft, that none so bestiall,
Nor saluage hart, but ruth of her sad plight
Would make to melt, or pitteously appall ;
And that vile Hag, all were her whole delight
In mischiefe, was much moued at so pitteous fight.

And gan recomfort her in her rude wyfe,
With womanish compassion of her plaint,
Wiping the teares from her suffused eyes,
And bidding her sit downe, to rest her faint 90
And / wearie limbs a while. She nothing quaint
Nor s'deignfull of so homely fashion,
Sith brought she was now to so hard constraint,
Sate downe vpon the dusty ground anon,
As glad of that small rest, as Bird of tempest gon.

Tho gan she gather vp her garments rent,
And her loose lockes to dight in order dew,
With golden wreath and gorgeous ornament ;
Whom such whenas the wicked Hag did vew,

l. 78, '*chrisfall*': l. 80, '*two orient perles*'—Dr. Morris erroneously notes '96 as reading '*to*': p. '497' is misprinted '597' in '96.

She was astonisht at her heavenly hew, 100
 And doubted her to deeme an earthly wight,
 But or some Goddesse, or of *Dianes* crew,
 And thought her to adore with humble spright ;
 T'adore thing so diuine as beauty, were but right.

This wicked woman had a wicked sonne,
 The comfort of her age and weary dayes,
 A laefie loord, for nothing good to donne,
 But stretched forth in idlenesse alwayes,
 Ne euer cast his mind to couet prayse,
 Or ply him selfe to any honest trade, 110
 But all the day before the sunny rayes
 He vs'd to slug, or sleepe in slothfull shade :
 Such laefineffe both lewd and poore attonce him made.

He comming home at vndertime, there found
 The fairest creature, that he euer saw,
 Sitting beside his mother on the ground ;
 The sight whereof did greatly him adaw,
 And his base thought with terrour and with aw
 So inly smot, that as one, which had gazed 119
 On the bright Sunne vnwares, doth soone withdraw
 His feeble eyne, which too much brightnesse dazed ;
 So stared he on her, and stood long while amazed. /

Softly at last he gan his mother aske,
 What mister wight that was, and whence deriued,
 That in so straunge disguizement there did maske,
 And by what accident she there arriued :

l. 107, 'laefy': l. 108, 'ydlennesse': l. 115, 'fayrest': l. 119, 'gas'd'—
 1609 'hath': l. 121, 'brightnes das'd': l. 122, 'amas'd': l. 124, 'deris'd',
 and so 'd' for 'ed' in ll. 126-7-9.

But she, as one nigh of her wits deprived,
 With nought but ghastly looks him answered,
 Like to a ghost, that lately is reuiued
 From *Stygian* shores, where late it wandered ; 130
 So both at her, and each at other wondered.

But the faire Virgin was so meeke and mild,
 That she to them vouchsafed to embrace
 Her goodly port, and to their senses vild,
 Her gentle speech applide, that in short space
 She grew familiare in that desert place.
 During which time, the Chorle through her so kind
 And curteise vse conceiu'd affection bace,
 And cast to loue her in his brutish mind ;
 No loue, but brutish lust, that was so beastly tind. 140

Closely the wicked flame his bowels brent,
 And shortly grew into outrageous fire ;
 Yet had he not the hart, nor hardiment,
 As vnto her to vtter his desire ;
 His caytiue thought durst not so high aspire,
 But with soft fighes, and louely semblaunces,
 He ween'd that his affection entire
 She should aread ; many refemblaunces
 To her he made, and many kind remembraunces.

Oft from the Forrest wildings he did bring, 150
 Whose sides empurpled were with smiling red,
 And oft young birds, which he had taught to sing
 His mistresse prayfes, sweetly caroled,

l. 132, '*fayre . . . myld*,' and so '*y*' for '*i*' in l. 134 : l. 135, '*applied*' :
 l. 139, , for ; : l. 149, '*kinde*' : l. 151, '*myling*' : l. 153, '*maistresse*
prayfes.'

Girlonds / of flowres sometimes for her faire hed
 He fine would dight ; sometimes the squirell wild
 He brought to her in bands, as conquered
 To be her thrall, his fellow seruant vild ; (mild.
 All which, she of him tooke with countenance meeke and

But past awhile, when she fit season saw
 To leaue that desert mansion, she cast 160
 In secret wize her selfe thence to withdraw,
 For feare of mischief, which she did forecast
 Might by the witch or by her sonne compast :
 Her wearie Palfrey clofely, as she might,
 Now well recouered after long repast,
 In his proud furnitures she freshly dight,
 His late miswandred wayes now to remeasure right.

And earely ere the dawning day appeard,
 She forth issued, and on her iourney went ;
 She went in perill, of each noyse affeard, 165
 And of each shade, that did it selfe present ;
 For still she feared to be ouerhent,
 Of that vile hag, or her vnciuile sonne :
 Who when too late awaking, well they kent,
 That their faire guest was gone, they both begonne
 To make exceeding mone, as they had bene vndonne.

But that lewd louer did the most lament
 For her depart, that euer man did heare ;
 He knockt his brest with desperate intent,
 And scratcht his face, and with his teeth did teare

l. 155, 'squirell' : l. 163, 'by' (bis) misprinted 'be,' and 'that' in '96 :
 l. 173, 'that' for 'her' in 1609 : l. 175, 'Fayre.'

His rugged flesh, and rent his ragged heare : 181
 That his sad mother seeing his sore plight,
 Was greatly woe begon, and gan to feare,
 Least his fraile senses were emperisht quight,
 And loue to frenzy turnd, fith loue is franticke hight. /

All wayes she fought, him to restore to plight,
 With herbs, with charms, with counsell, & with teares,
 But tears, nor charms, nor herbs, nor counsell might
 Affwage the fury, which his entrails teares :
 So strong is passion, that no reason heares. 190
 Tho when all other helps she saw to faile,
 She turnd her selfe backe to her wicked leares
 And by her deuillish arts thought to preuaile,
 To bring her backe againe, or worke her finall bale.

Eftsoones out of her hidden caue she cald
 An hideous beast, of horrible aspect,
 That could the stoutest courage haue appald ;
 Monstrous, mishapt, and all his backe was spect
 With thousand spots of colours quaint elect,
 Thereto so swift, that it all beasts did pas : 200
 Like neuer yet did liuing eye detect ;
 But likest it to an *Hyena* was,
 That feeds on womens flesh, as others feede on gras.

It forth she cald, and gaue it streight in charge,
 Through thicke and thin her to pursew apace,
 Ne once to stay to rest, or breath at large,
 Till her he had attained, and brought in place,

l. 188, 'might' [sic] : l. 193, 'diuclish' : l. 197, 'corage' : l. 198, , after
 'monstrous'—accepted : l. 200, 'swift', and so l. 209 : l. 201, 'eie' : l. 203,
 'wemens' : l. 205, 'pursew' : l. 207, 'she' [sic].

Or quite deuourd her beauties scornfull grace.
 The Monster swift as word, that from her went,
 Went forth in hast, and did her footing trace 210
 So sure and swiftly, through his perfect sent,
 And passing speede, that shortly he her ouerhent.

Whom when the fearefull Damzell nigh espide,
 No need to bid her fast away to flie ;
 That vgly shape so fore her terrifide,
 That it she shund no lesse, then dread to die,
 And / her flit Palfrey did so well apply
 His nimble feet to her conceiued feare,
 That whilest his breath did strength to him supply,
 From perill free he her away did beare : 220
 But when his force gan faile, his pace gan wex areare.

Which whenas she perceiu'd, she was dismayd
 At that same last extremitie full fore,
 And of her safetie greatly grew afrayd ;
 And now she gan approach to the sea shore,
 As it befell, that she could flie no more,
 But yield her selfe to spoile of greedinesse.
 Lightly she leaped, as a wight forlore,
 From her dull horse, in desperate distresse,
 And to her feet betooke her doubtfull sickernesse. 230

Not halfe so fast the wicked *Myrrha* fled
 From dread of her reuenging fathers hond :
 Nor halfe so fast to saue her maidenhed,
 Fled fearefull *Daphne* on th'*Ægean* strond,

l. 210, 'haste' : l. 217, 'flitt' : l. 223, 'extremity ful' : l. 224, 'safely' :
 l. 233, 'maydenhed.'

As *Florimell* fled from that Monster yond,
 To reach the sea, ere she of him were raught :
 For in the sea to drowne her selfe she fond,
 Rather then of the tyrant to be caught : (taught.
 Thereto feare gaue her wings, and neede her courage

It fortun'd (high God did so ordaine) 240
 As she arriued on the roring shore,
 In minde to leape into the mighty maine,
 A little boate lay houting her before,
 In which there slept a fisher old and pore,
 The whiles his nets were drying on the sand :
 Into the same she leapt, and with the ore
 Did thrust the shallop from the floting strand :
 So safetie found at sea, which she found not at land. /

The Monster ready on the pray to seafe,
 Was of his forward hope deceiued quight ; 250
 Ne durst assay to wade the perlous seas ;
 But greedily long gaping at the fight,
 At last in vaine was forst to turne his flight,
 And tell the idle tidings to his Dame :
 Yet to auenge his deuillish despight,
 He set vpon her Palfrey tired lame,
 And slew him cruelly, ere any reskew came.

And after hauing him embowelled,
 To fill his hellish gorge, it chaunst a knight
 To passe that way, as forth he trauelled ; 260
 It was a goodly Swaine, and of great might,

l. 239, 'fear . . . & need . . . corage': l. 243, 'hoving': l. 246, 'shee lept':
 l. 248, 'safety found' (bis): l. 255, 'diuelishe': l. 256, 'fett': l. 259
 'hellish' misprinted in '96 'bellish': l. 260, 'traueiled': l. 261, 'Yt.'

That at the last his fiercenesse gan abate,
 And meekely stoup vnto the victour strong :
 Who to auenge the implacable wrong,
 Which he supposed donne to *Florimell*,
 Sought by all meanes his dolour to prolong,
 Sith dint of steele his carcas could not quell :
 His maker with her charmes had framed him so well.

The golden ribband, which that virgin wore 321
 About her slender waft, he tooke in hand,
 And with it bound the beaft, that lowd did rore
 For great despight of that vnwonted band,
 Yet dared not his victour to withstand,
 But trembled like a lambe, fled from the pray,
 And all the way him followd on the strand,
 As he had long bene learned to obay ;
 Yet neuer learned he such seruice, till that day.

Thus as he led the Beast along the way, 330
 He spide far off a mighty Giauntesse,
 Fast flying on a Courser dapled gray,
 From a bold knight, that with great hardinesse
 Her hard pursfwd, and sought for to suppressse ;
 She bore before her lap a dolefull Squire,
 Lying athwart her horse in great distresse,
 Fast bounden hand and foote with cords of wire,
 Whom she did meane to make the thrall of her desire.

Which whenas *Satyrane* beheld, in haft
 He left his captiue Beast at liberty, 340

l. 314, '*fiercenes*' : l. 315, '*victor*,' and so l. 325 : l. 318, '*dolor*' : l. 322
 '*waft*' : l. 323, '*bound*' : l. 331, '*of*' : l. 339, '*hafte*' : l. 340, '*lefte*'

And crost the nearest way, by which he cast
 Her to encounter, ere she passed by :
 But / she the way shund nathemore for thy,
 But forward gallopt fast ;. which when he spyde,
 His mighty speare he couched warily,
 And at her ran : she hauing him descryde,
 Her selfe to fight addrest, and threw her lode aside.

Like as a Goshauke, that in foote doth beare
 A trembling Culuer, hauing spide on high
 An Egle, that with plumy wings doth sheare 350
 The subtile ayre, stouping with all his might,
 The quarrey throwes to ground with fell despight,
 And to the battell doth her selfe prepare :
 So ran the Geaunteffe vnto the fight ;
 Her fire eyes with furious sparkes did stare,
 And with blasphemous bannes high God in peeces tare.

She caught in hand an huge great yron mace,
 Wherewith she many had of life depriued,
 But ere the stroke could feize his aymed place,
 His speare amids her sun-broad shield arriued ; 360
 Yet nathemore the steele a sunder riued,
 All were the beame in bignesse like a mast,
 Ne her out of the stedfast sadle driued,
 But glauncing on the tempred mettall, braff
 In thousand shiuers, and so forth beside her past.

Her Steed did stagger with that puiffaunt strooke ;
 But she no more was moued with that might,

l. 344, , for ; : l. 353, 'batteill': l. 355, 'fyrie': l. 358, 'depriu'd,'
 and so 'd' in the rhyme-words of the stanza for 'ed': l. 360, 'brode':
 l. 362, 'bignes.'

Then it had lighted on an aged Oke ;
 Or on the marble Pillour, that is pight
 Vpon the top of Mount *Olympus* hight, 370
 For the braue youthly Champions to assay,
 With burning charet wheelles it nigh to smite :
 But who that smites it, mars his ioyous play,
 And is the spectacle of ruinous decay. /

Yet therewith fore enrag'd, with sterne regard
 Her dreadfull weapon she to him addrest,
 Which on his helmet martelled so hard,
 That made him low incline his lofty crest,
 And bowd his battred visour to his breast :
 Wherewith he was so stund, that he no'te ryde 380
 But reeled to and fro from East to West :
 Which when his cruell enemy espyde,
 She lightly vnto him adioyned fide to fyde ;

And on his collar laying puissant hand,
 Out of his wauering feat him pluckt perforce,
 Perforce him pluckt, vnable to withstand,
 Or helpe himselfe, and laying thwart her horse,
 In loathly wise like to a carion corse,
 She bore him fast away. Which when the knight,
 That her pursewed, saw with great remorse, 390
 He neare was touched in his noble spright,
 And gan encrease his speed, as she encreast her flight.

Whom when as nigh approaching she espyde,

l. 380, '*she was so stuned*'—thus misprinted in '90, but corrected in 'Faults escaped' thus, '*Shee hee stuned stund*' [*sic*], but under p. 500 by mistake for 506: l. 381, '*cast . . . west*': l. 383, '*fyde*' for '*side*' (1st): l. 384, '*puissant*': l. 391, '*were*,' but corrected in 'Faults escaped,' though also under p. 500 for 506.

She threw away her burden angrily ;
 For she list not the battell to abide,
 But made her selfe more light, away to fly :
 Yet her the hardy knight purfewd so nye,
 That almost in the backe he oft her strake :
 But still when him at hand she did espy, 399
 She turnd, and semblaunce of faire fight did make ;
 But when he stayd, to flight againe she did her take.

By this good Sir *Satyrane* gan wake
 Out of his dreame, that did him long entraunce,
 And seeing none in place, he gan to make
 Exceeding mone, and curst that cruell chaunce,
 Which / reft from him so faire a cheuifaunce :
 At length he spide, whereas that wofull Squire,
 Whom he had reskewed from captiuaunce
 Of his strong foe, lay tombled in the myre,
 Vnable to arise, or foot or hand to styre. 410

To whom approching, well he mote perceiue
 In that foule plight a comely personage,
 And louely face, made fit for to deceiue
 Fraile Ladies hart with loues consuming rage,
 Now in the blossome of his freshest age :
 He reard him vp, and loofd his yron bands,
 And after gan inquire his parentage,
 And how he fell into that Gyaunts hands,
 And who that was, which chaced her along the lands.

Then trembling yet through feare, the Squire bespake,
 That Geaunteffe *Argante* is behight, 421

l. 395, 'batteill': l. 406, 'him from' in 1609: l. 407, 'spyde . . .
Squyre': l. 412, 'fowle': l. 418, 'the.'

A daughter of the *Titans* which did make
 Warre against heauen, and heaped hils on hight,
 To scale the skyes, and put *Ioue* from his right :
 Her fire *Typhaeus* was, who mad through merth,
 And drunke with bloud of men, slaine by his might,
 Through incest, her of his owne mother Earth
 Whilome begot, being but halfe twin of that berth.

For at that berth another Babe she bore,
 To weete the mighty *Ollyphant*, that wrought 430
 Great wreake to many errant knights of yore,
 And many hath to foule confusion brought.
 These twinnes, men say, (a thing far passing thought)
 Whiles in their mothers wombe enclosed they were,
 Ere they into the lightsome world were brought,
 In fleshly lust were mingled both yfere,
 And in that monstrous wife did to the world appere. /

So liu'd they euer after in like fin,
 Gainst natures law, and good behaioure :
 But greatest shame was to that maiden twin, 440
 Who not content so fowly to deuoure
 Her natieue flesh, and staine her brothers bowre,
 Did wallow in all other fleshly myre,
 And suffred beasts her body to deflowre :
 So whot she burned in that lustfull fyre,
 Yet all that might not flake her sensuall desyre.

But ouer all the countrey she did raunge,
 To seeke young men, to quench her flaming thirst,

l. 423, 'heuen' : l. 425, 'fyre Typhoeus' : l. 426, 'dronke . . . blood' :
 l. 428, 'Whylome' : l. 430, 'mightie' : l. 432, 'Till him Chylde Thopas to
 confusion brought' : l. 435, 'lightsom' : l. 439, 'behaueoure' : l. 442, 'staine',
 badly in '96 misprinted 'straine' : l. 444, 'beastes' : l. 447, 'countrie' :
 l. 448, 'thrust'.

And feed her fancy with delightfull chaunge :
 Whom so she fittest finds to serue her lust, 450
 Through her maine strength, in which she most doth
 She with her brings into a secret Ile, (trust,
 Where in eternall bondage dye he must,
 Or be the vassall of her pleasures vile,
 And in all shamefull fort him selfe with her defile.

Me feely wretch she so at vantage caught,
 After she long in waite for me did lye,
 And meant vnto her prison to haue brought,
 Her lothsome pleasure there to satiffye ;
 That thousand deathes me leuer were to dye, 460
 Then breake the vow, that to faire *Columbell*
 I plighted haue, and yet keepe stedfastly :
 As for my name, it mistreth not to tell ;
 Call me the *Squyre of Dames* that me beseemeth well.

But that bold knight, whom ye pursuing saw
 That Geaunteffe, is not such, as she seemed,
 But a faire virgin, that in martiall law,
 And deedes of armes aboue all Dames is deemed,
 And / aboue many knights is eke esteemed,
 For her great worth ; She *Palladine* is hight : 470
 She you from death, you me from dread redeemed.
 Ne any may that Monster match in fight,
 But she, or such as she, that is so chaste a wight.

Her well beseemes that Queft (quoth *Satyrane*)
 But read, thou *Squyre of Dames*, what vow is this,

l. 450, 'findes' : l. 452, 'bringes' : l. 459, 'lothsom' : l. 466, 'seemd,'
 and so rhyme-words of the stanza 'd' for 'ed' : l. 469, 'knightes.'

Which thou vpon thy felfe haft lately ta'ne ?
 That fhall I you recount (quoth he) ywis,
 So be ye pleafd to pardon all amis.
 That gentle Lady, whom I loue and ferue,
 After long fuit and weary feruicis, 480
 Did afke me, how I could her loue deferue,
 And how fhe might be fure, that I would neuer fwerue.

I glad by any meanes her grace to gaine,
 Bad her commaund my life to faue, or fpill.
 Eftfoones fhe bad me, with incefſaunt paine
 To wander through the world abroad at will,
 And euery where, where with my power or skill
 I might do feruice vnto gentle Dames,
 That I the fame ſhould faithfully fulfill, (names
 And at the twelue monethes end ſhould bring their
 And pledges ; as the ſpoiles of my victorious games.

So well I to faire Ladies feruice did, 492
 And found fuch fauour in their louing hartes,
 That ere the yeare his courſe had compaffid,
 Three hundred pledges for my good defartes,
 And thriſe three hundred thanks for my good partes
 I with me brought, and did to her preſent :
 Which when fhe ſaw, more bent to eke my ſmartes,
 Then to reward my truſty true intent,
 She gan for me deuife a grieuous puniſhment. / 500

To weet, that I my trauell ſhould refume,
 And with like labour walke the world around,

l. 476, , for ? : l. 478, , for . : l. 480, 'wearie' : l. 485, 'badd' : l. 488,
 'doe' : p. 510 in '96 misprinted '600' : l. 501, 'trauicill' : p. 502,
 'around,' and ſo 'w' for 'u' in rhyme-words of the stanza.

Ne euer to her prefence should prefume,
 Till I fo many other Dames had found,
 The which, for all the fuit I could propound,
 Would me refufe their pledges to afford,
 But did abide for euer chafte and found.
 Ah gentle Squire (quoth he) tell at one word,
 How many foundft thou fuch to put in thy record ?

In deed Sir knight (faid he) one word may tell 510
 All, that I euer found fo wifely ftrayd ;
 For onely three they were difpofd fo well,
 And yet three yeares I now abroad haue ftrayd;
 To find them out. Mote I (then laughing fayd
 The knight) inquire of thee, what were thofe three,
 The which thy proffred curtefie denyd ?
 Or ill they feemed fure auizd to bee,
 Or brutifhly brought vp, that neu'r did fashions fee.

The firft which then refused me (faid hee)
 Certes was but a common Courtifane, 520
 Yet flat refufd to haue a do with mee,
 Because I could not giue her many a Iane.
 (Thereat full hartely laughed *Satyrane*)
 The fecond was an holy Nunne to chofe,
 Which would not let me be her Chappellane,
 Because fhe knew, fhe faid, I would difclofe
 Her counfell, if he fould her truft in me repofe.

The third a Damzell was of low degree,
 Whom I in countrey cottage found by chaunce ;

l. 507, 'chafte': l. 508, 'Squyre': l. 509, 'foundft': l. 511, 'found,' and
 so l. 529: l. 513, 'abrode': l. 514, 'fynd': l. 521, 'adoe': l. 526,
 'fayd.'

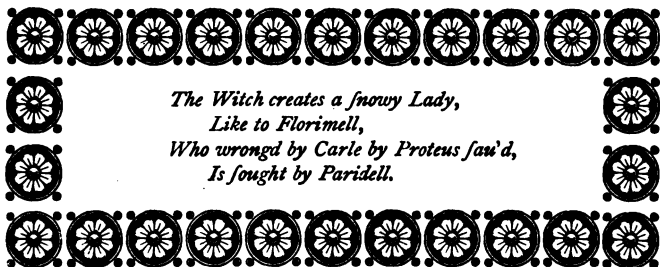
Full little weened I, that chafitee 530
 Had lodging in so meane a maintenaunce,
 Yet / was she faire, and in her countenance
 Dwelt simple truth in seemely fashion.
 Long thus I woo'd her with dew obseruance,
 In hope vnto my pleasure to haue won ;
 But was as farre at laft, as when I first begon.

Safe her, I neuer any woman found,
 That chastity did for it selfe embrace,
 But were for other causes firme and sound ;
 Either for want of handsome time and place, 540
 Or else for feare of shame and fowle disgrace.
 Thus am I hopelesse euer to attaine
 My Ladies loue, in such a desperate case,
 But all my dayes am like to waft in vaine,
 Seeking to match the chaste with th'vnchaste Ladies
 traine.

Perdy, (said *Satyrane*) thou *Squire of Dames*,
 Great labour fondly hast thou hent in hand,
 To get small thanks, and therewith many blames,
 That may emongst *Alcides* labours stand.
 Thence backe returning to the former land, 550
 Where late he left the Beast, he ouercame,
 He found him not ; for he had broke his band,
 And was return'd againe vnto his Dame,
 To tell what tydings of faire *Florimell* became. /

l. 530, 'litle': l. 532, 'fayre . . . countenaunce': l. 534, 'obseruance':
 l. 535, , for ; : l. 536, 'far': l. 539, , for ; : l. 544, 'wasle': l. 546,
 'fayd . . . Squire': l. 550, 'bace'—bad misprint of 'go for 'backe': l. 553,
 'returnd': l. 554, 'fayre.'

Cant. VIII.



S O oft as I this histry record,
 My hart doth mekt with meere compassion,
 To thinke, how caufelesse of her owne accord
 This gentle Damzell, whom I wrote vpon,
 Should plonged be in such affliction, 10
 Without all hope of comfort or reliefe,
 That sure I weene, the hardest hart of stone,
 Would hardly find to aggrauate her grieve;
 For misery craues rather mercie, then reprieve.

But that accursed Hag, her hostesse late,
 Had so enranckled her malitious hart,
 That she desyrd th'abridgement of her fate,
 Or long enlargement of her painefull smart.
 Now when the Beast, which by her wicked art
 Late forth she sent, she backe returning spyde, 20
 Tyde with her broken girdle, it a part

l. 13, 'finde'; l. 14, 'mercie'; l. 20, 'foorth'; l. 21, 'golden.'

Of her rich spoyles, whom he had earst destroyd,
She weend, and wondrous gladnesse to her hart applyde.

And with it running haft'ly to her sonne,
Thought with that sight him much to haue reliued ;
Who thereby deeming sure the thing as donne,
His former grieve with furie fresh reuiued,
Much / more then earst, and would haue algates riuied
The hart out of his breast : for fith her ded
He surely dempt, himselfe he thought depriued 30
Quite of all hope, wherewith he long had fed
His foolish maladie, and long time had misfed.

With thought whereof, exceeding mad he grew,
And in his rage his mother would haue flaine,
Had she not fled into a secret mew,
Where she was wont her Sprights to entertaine
The maisters of her art : there was she faine
To call them all in order to her ayde,
And them coniure vpon eternall paine,
To counsell her so carefully dismayd, 40
How she might heale her sonne, whose senses were de-
(cayd.

By their aduise, and her owne wicked wit,
She there deuiz'd a wondrous worke to frame,
Whose like on earth was neuer framed yit,
That euen Nature selfe enuide the same,
And grudg'd to see the counterfet should shame
The thing it selfe. In hand she boldly tooke
To make another like the former Dame,

l. 23, ' & . . . gladnes' : l. 24, 'ronning' : l. 25, 'reliu'd,' and so 'd' for 'ed' in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 29, 'dedd,' and so double d in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 32, 'malady' : l. 42, 'device.'

Another *Florimell*, in shape and looke
So liuely and so like, that many it mistooke. \ 50

The substance, whereof she the bodie made,
Was purest snow in massie mould congeald,
Which she had gathered in a shady glade
Of the *Riphaean* hills, to her reueald
By errant Sprights, but from all men conceald :
The same she tempered with fine Mercury,
And virgin wax, that neuer yet was seald,
And mingled them with perfect vermily,
That like a liuely sanguine it seem'd to the eye. /

In stead of eyes two burning lampes she set 60
In silver sockets, shyning like the skyes,
And a quicke mouing Spirit did arret
To stirre and roll them, like a womans eyes ;
In stead of yellow lockes she did deuife,
With golden wyre to weaue her curled head ;
Yet golden wyre was not so yellow thrife
As *Florimells* faire haire : and in the stead
Of life, she put a Spright to rule the carkasse dead.

A wicked Spright yfraught with fawning guile,
And faire resemblance aboue all the rest, 70
Which with the Prince of Darknesse fell somewhile,
From heauens blisse and euerlasting rest ;

l. 51, 'body' : l. 52, 'massy' : l. 53, 'shady' : l. 57, 'wax' in 1609 :
l. 59, 'seemd' : l. 63, 'to womens' : l. 64, 'deuyse' : l. 66, 'thryse' :
l. 67, 'fayre heare' : l. 68, 'carcas' : l. 69, 'guyle,' and so 'y' for 'i'
in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 70, 'fayre' : l. 71, 'Darkenes' : *ib.*,
'somewhyle'—corrected as in text from 'lomewhile' : l. 72, 'blis,' and, for ;.

Him needed not instruct, which way were best
 Himselfe to fashion likest *Florimell*,
 Ne how to speake, ne how to vse his gest,
 For he in counterfeifance did excell,
 And all the wyles of wemens wits knew passing well.

Him shaped thus, she deckt in garments gay,
 Which *Florimell* had left behind her late,
 That who so then her saw, would surely say, 80
 It was her selfe, whom it did imitate,
 Or fairer then her selfe, if ought algate
 Might fairer be. And then she forth her brought
 Vnto her sonne, that lay in feeble state ;
 Who seeing her gan streight vpstart, and thought
 She was the Lady selfe, who he so long had fought.

Tho fast her clipping twixt his armes twaine,
 Extremely ioyed in so happie fight,
 And soone forgot his former sickly paine ;
 But she, the more to seeme such as she hight, 90
 Coyly / rebutted his embracement light ;
 Yet still with gentle countenance retained,
 Enough to hold a foole in vaine delight :
 Him long she so with shadowes entertained,
 As her Creatresse had in charge to her ordained.

Till on a day, as she disposed was
 To walke the woods with that his Idole faire,

l. 76, 'counterfeifance': l. 80, 'whom' in 1609: l. 82, 'fayrer,' and so
 l. 83: l. 87, 'twayne,' and so 'y' for 'i' in rhyme-words of the stanza:
 l. 88, 'happy': l. 89, 'sickely': l. 92, 'countenance'—misprinted in '96
 'countenant,' and 'd' for 'ed' in rhyme-words of the stanza': l. 97,
 'woodes.'

Her to disport, and idle time to pas,
 In th'open freshneffe of the gentle aire,
 A knight that way there chaunced to reparaire ; 100
 Yet knight was not, but a boastfull fwaine,
 That deedes of armes had euer in despaire,
 Proud *Braggadocchio*, that in vaunting vaine
 His glory did repose, and credit did maintaine.

He seeing with that Chorle so faire a wight,
 Decked with many a costly ornament,
 Much merueiled thereat, as well he might,
 And thought that match a fowle disparagement :
 His bloudie speare eftfoones he boldly bent
 Against the silly clowne, who dead through feare,
 Fell streight to ground in great astonishment ; 111
 Villein (said he) this Ladie is my deare,
 Dy, if thou it gaine say : I will away her beare.

The fearefull Chorle durst not gaine say nor dooe,
 But trembling stood and yielded him the pray ;
 Who finding little leasure her to wooe,
 On *Tromparts* steed her mounted without stay,
 And without reskew led her quite away.
 Proud man himselfe then *Braggadocchio* deemed,
 And next to none, after that happie day, 120
 Being possessed of that spoyle, which seemed
 The fairest wight on ground, and most of men esteemed./

But when he saw himselfe free from pourfute,
 He gan make gentle purpose to his Dame,

l. 99, 'freshnes' : l. 109, 'bloody . . . eftfoones' : l. 112, 'sayd . . . Lady' : l. 115, 'trembling' : l. 119, 'deem'd,' and so 'd' for 'ed' in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 120, 'happy' : l. 123, 'hee . . . him selfe.'

With termes of loue and lewdnesse dissolute ;
 For he could well his glozing speaches frame
 To such vaine vses, that him best became :
 But she thereto would lend but light regard,
 As seeming fory, that she euer came
 Into his powre, that vsed her so hard, 130
 To reauce her honor, which she more then life prefard.

Thus as they two of kindnesse treated long,
 There them by chaunce encountred on the way
 An armed knight, vpon a courser strong,
 Whose trampling feet vpon the hollow lay
 Seemed to thunder, and did nigh affray
 That Capons courage : yet he looked grim,
 And fain'd to cheare his Ladie in difmay ;
 Who seem'd for feare to quake in euery lim,
 And her to saue from outrage, meekely prayed him.

Fiercely that stranger forward came, and nigh 141
 Approching, with bold words and bitter threat,
 Bad that same boaster, as he mote, on high
 To leaue to him that Lady for excheat,
 Or bide him battell without further treat.
 That challenge did too peremptory seeme,
 And fild his senses with abashment great ;
 Yet seeing nigh him ieopardy extreme,
 He it dissembled well, and light seem'd to esteeme.

Saying, Thou foolish knight, that weenst with words
 To steale away, that I with blowes haue wonne, 151

l. 132, '*kindnes*': l. 135, '*feete*': l. 137, '*corage*': l. 138, '*faynd* . . .
lady': l. 139, '*seemd*,' and so l. 149 ; l. 141, '*strawnger*': l. 144, '*lady*':
 l. 145, '*battleill*.'

And brought through points of many perilous swords:
 But if thee list to see thy Courser ronne,
 Or / proue thy selfe, this sad encounter shonne,
 And seeke else without hazard of thy hed.
 At those proud words that other knight begonne
 To wexe exceeding wroth, and him ared
 To turne his steede about, or sure he should be ded.

Sith then (said *Braggadocchio*) needes thou wilt
 Thy dayes abridge, through prooffe of puiffance, 160
 Turne we our steedes, that both in equall tilt
 May meet againe, and each take happie chance.
 This said, they both a furlongs mountenance
 Retyrd their steedes, to ronne in euen race :
 But *Braggadocchio* with his bloudie lance
 Once hauing turnd, no more returnd his face,
 But left his loue to losse, and fled himselfe apace.

The knight him seeing fly, had no regard
 Him to pourfew, but to the Ladie rode,
 And hauing her from *Trompart* lightly reard, 170
 Vpon his Courser fet the louely lode,
 And with her fled away without abode.
 Well weened he, that fairest *Florimell*
 It was, with whom in company he yode,
 And so her selfe did alwaies to him tell ;
 So made him thinke him selfe in heauen, that was in hell.

l. 152, '*brought through*,' not '*brought, through*,' as Dr. Morris inadvertently records : l. 155, '*els . . . hedd*,' and so double *d* in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 156, '*proud*' : l. 157, '*wex*' : l. 160, '*daies . . . puiffance*,' and so '*au*' for '*a*' in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 161, '*steeds*' : l. 162, '*meete . . . happy*' : l. 163, no , after '*said*' : l. 164, '*Retird*' : l. 165, '*bloody*' : l. 167, '*lefte . . . him selfe*' : l. 168, '*flie*' : l. 169, '*lady*' : l. 171, '*fett*' : l. 176, '*heuen*.'

But *Florimell* her selfe was farre away,
 Driuen to great distresse by Fortune straunge,
 And taught the carefull Mariner to play,
 Sith late mischaunce had her compeld to chaunge
 The land for sea, at randon there to raunge: 181
 Yet there that cruell Queene auengereffe,
 Not satisfide so farre her to estraunge
 From courtly blisse and wonted happineffe,
 Did heape on her new waues of weary wretchednesse. /

For being fled into the fishers bote,
 For refuge from the Monsters crueltie,
 Long so she on the mightie maine did flote,
 And with the tide droue forward careleslie;
 For th'aire was milde, and cleared was the skie, 190
 And all his windes *Dan Aeolus* did keepe,
 From stirring vp their stormy enmitie,
 As pitying to see her waile and weepe;
 But all the while the fisher did securely sleepe.

At last when droncke with drowfineffe, he woke,
 And saw his drouer driue along the streame,
 He was dismayd, and thrife his breast he stroke,
 For maruell of that accident extreame;
 But when he saw, that blazing beauties beame,
 Which with rare light his bote did beautifie, 200
 He marueild more, and thought he yet did dreame
 Not well awakt, or that some extasie
 Affotted had his sense, or dazed was his eie.

l. 178, '*fortune*': l. 183, '*satisfyde . . . far*': l. 184, '*blis*': l. 187, '*cruelty*,' and so '*y*' for '*ie*' in rhyme-words of the stanza: l. 188, '*mightie*': l. 190, '*ayre*': l. 197, '*breff*': l. 198, '*maruell*': l. 200, '*beautifye*,' and so '*y*' for '*i*' in rhyme-words of the stanza: l. 203, '*sence*.'

But when her well auizing, he perceiued
 To be no vifion, nor fantafticke fight,
 Great comfort of her prefence he conceiued,
 And felt in his old courage new delight
 To gin awake, and stirre his frozen fpright :
 Tho rudely afkt her, how fhe thither came.
 Ah (faid fhe) father, I note read aright, 210
 What hard misfortune brought me to the fame ;
 Yet am I glad that here I now in fafety am.

But thou good man, fith farre in fea we bee,
 And the great waters gin apace to fwell,
 That now no more we can the maine-land fee,
 Haue care, I pray, to guide the cock-bote well,
 Leaft / worfe on fea then vs on land befell.
 Thereat th'old man did nought but fondly grin,
 And faid, his boat the way could wifely tell :
 But his deceitfull eyes did neuer lin, 220
 To looke on her faire face, and marke her fnowy fkin.

The fight whereof in his congealed flefh,
 Infixt fuch fecret ftting of greedy luft,
 That the drie withered ftocke it gan refresh,
 And kindled heat, that foone in flame forth bruft :
 The driefte wood is fooneft burnt to duft.
 Rudely to her he lept, and his rough hand
 Where ill became him, rafhly would haue thruft,

l. 204, '*perceiu'd*,' and so '*d*' for '*ed*' in the rhyme-words of the stanza :
 l. 207, '*corage*' : l. 208, '*ftir* . . . *frozen*' : l. 209, '*thether*' : l. 210,
 '*faid*,' and no , after '*father*' : l. 212, '*ame*' : l. 213, '*far*' : l. 215, '*mayn*' :
 l. 217, , for . : l. 219, '*faide*' : l. 227, '*hand*'—another example of Spenser's
 non-exact rhymes, but likely it was read '*hand*.'

But she with angry scorne him did withstond,
And shamefully reprov'd for his rudenesse fond. 230

But he, that neuer good nor maners knew,
Her sharpe rebuke full litle did esteeme ;
Hard is to teach an old horse amble trew.
The inward smoke, that did before but steeme,
Broke into open fire and rage extreme,
And now he strength gan adde vnto his will,
Forcing to doe, that did him fowle misseeme :
Beastly he threw her downe, ne car'd to spill
Her garments gay with scales of fish, that all did fill.

The silly virgin stroue him to withstand, 240
All that she might, and him in vaine reuild :
She struggled strongly both with foot and hand,
To saue her honor from that villaine vild,
And cride to heauen, from humane helpe exild.
O ye braue knights, that boast this Ladies loue,
Where be ye now, when she is nigh defild
Of filthy wretch ? well may shee you reprove
Of falshood or of slouth, when most it may behoue. /

But if that thou, Sir *Satyras*, didst weete,
Or thou, Sir *Peridure*, her forie state, 250
How soone would yee assemble many a fleete,
To fetch from sea, that ye at land lost late ;
Towres, Cities, Kingdomes ye would ruinate,
In your auengement and dispiteous rage,
Ne ought your burning fury mote abate ;

l. 230, 'reprov'd' : l. 242, 'foote' : l. 243, 'vilde' : l. 244, 'heuen' :
l. 248, 'falshood' : l. 250, 'fery' : l. 253, 'citties, kingdomes.'

But if Sir *Calidore* could it presage,
No liuing creature could his cruelty asswage.

But fith that none of all her knights is nye,
See how the heauens of voluntary grace,
And soueraine fauour towards chastity, 260
Doe succour send to her distressed cace :
So much high God doth innocence embrace.
It fortun'd, whilest thus she stifly stroue,
And the wide sea importuned long space
With shrilling shriekes, *Proteus* abroad did roue,
Along the fomy waues driuing his finny droue.

Proteus is Shepheard of the seas of yore,
And hath the charge of *Neptunes* mightie heard ;
An aged fire with head all frowy hore,
And sprinckled frost vpon his deawy beard : 270
Who when those pittifull outcries he heard,
Through all the seas so ruefully resound,
His charet swift in hafte he thither steard,
Which with a teeme of scaly *Phocas* bound
Was drawne vpon the waues, that fomed him around.

And comming to that Fishers wandring bote,
That went at will, withouten carde or sayle,
He therein saw that yrkesome sight, which fmote
Deepe indignation and compaffion frayle
Into / his hart attonce : streight did he hayle 280
That greedy villein from his hoped pray,
Of which he now did very litle fayle,

l. 260, 'faour': l. 261, 'succor': l. 268, 'mighty': l. 269, 'frowy' of '90 and '96 is 'frowy' in 1609: l. 272, 'resound,' and so 'w' for 'u' in rhyme-words of the stanza: l. 273, 'chareti fwiifte . . . hafi . . . thether': l. 277, 'card.'



And with his staffe, that driues his Heard astray,
Him bet so fore, that life and sense did much dismay.

The whiles the pitteous Ladie vp did ryse,
Ruffled and fowly raid with filthy soyle,
And blubbred face with teares of her faire eyes :
Her heart nigh broken was with weary toyle,
To saue her selfe from that outrageous spoyle,
But when she looked vp, to weet, what wight 290
Had her from so infamous fact assayld,
For shame, but more for feare of his grim sight,
Downe in her lap she hid her face, and loudly shrigh.

Her selfe not faued yet from daunger dred
She thought, but chaung'd from one to other feare ;
Like as a fearefull Partridge, that is fled
From the sharpe Hauke, which her attached neare,
And fals to ground, to seeke for succour theare,
Whereas the hungry Spaniels she does spy,
With greedy iawes her readie for to teare ; 300
In such distresse and sad perplexity
Was *Florimell*, when *Proteus* she did see thereby.

But he endeuoured with speeches milde
Her to recomfort, and accourage bold,
Bidding her feare no more her foeman vilde,
Nor doubt himselfe ; and who he was, her told.

l. 283, 'heard': l. 284, 'bett . . . fence': l. 285, 'Lady': l. 291, 'assoyld'—still another instance of Spenser's neglects. Church read 'Did . . . assayle,' but (*meo iudicio*) it is well here, and throughout, to retain the original word as passed and repassed by the Poet: l. 293, 'loudly': l. 294, 'dredd,' and so double *d* in l. 296: l. 296, 'partridge': l. 297, 'hauke': l. 298, 'succor': l. 299, 'Spaniels . . . spy': l. 302, 'her by': l. 303, 'endeuored.'

Yet all that could not from affright her hold,
 Ne to recomfort her at all preuayld ;
 For her faint heart was with the frozen cold
 Benumbd so inly, that her wits nigh fayld, 310
 And all her senses with abashment quite were quayld. /

Her vp betwixt his rugged hands he reard,
 And with his frore lips full softly kist,
 Whiles the cold yfickles from his rough beard,
 Dropped adowne vpon her yuorie brest :
 Yet he himselfe so busily addrest,
 That her out of astonishment he wrought,
 And out of that same filthers filthy nest
 Remouing her, into his charet brought,
 And there with many gentle termes her faire befought.

But that old leachour, which with bold assault 321
 That beautie durst presume to violate,
 He cast to punish for his hainous fault ;
 Then tooke he him yet trembling fith of late,
 And tyde behind his charet, to aggrate
 The virgin, whom he had abusde so fore :
 So drag'd him through the waues in scornfull state,
 And after cast him vp, vpon the shore ;
 But *Florimell* with him vnto his bowre he bore.

His bowre is in the bottome of the maine, 330
 Vnder a mightie rocke, gainst which do raue
 The roaring billowes in their proud disdaine,
 That with the angry working of the waue,

l. 309, 'hart . . . frozen': l. 311, 'sences': l. 315, 'yuory': l. 316,
 'him selfe': l. 331, 'doe': l. 332, 'roving.'

Therein is eaten out an hollow caue,
 That seemes rough Mafons hand with engines keene
 Had long while laboured it to engraue :
 There was his wonne, ne liuing wight was seene,
 Saue one old *Nymph*, hight *Panope* to keepe it cleane.

Thither he brought the fory *Florimell*,
 And entertained her the best he might 340
 And *Panope* her entertaigned eke well,
 As an immortall mote a mortall wight,
 To / winne her liking vnto his delight :
 With flattering words he sweetly wooed her,
 And offered faire gifts t'allure her sight,
 But she both offers and the offerer
 Despyfde, and all the fawning of the flatterer.

Daily he tempted her with this or that,
 And neuer suffred her to be at rest :
 But euermore she him refused flat, 350
 And all his fained kindnesse did detest.
 So firmly she had sealed vp her brest.
 Sometimes he boasted, that a God he hight :
 But she a mortall creature loued best :
 Then he would make himselfe a mortall wight ;
 But then she said she lou'd none, but a Faerie knight.

Then like a Faerie knight himselfe he drest ;
 For euery shape on him he could endew :
 Then like a king he was to her exprest,
 And offred kingdomes vnto her in vew, 360

l. 338, 'high': l. 339, 'Thether': l. 344, 'wordes': l. 345, 'guiftes':
 l. 348, 'Dayly': l. 351, 'kindnes': l. 355, 'him selfe,' and so ll. 357,
 366, and 372: l. 356, 'Faery': l. 360, 'kingdoms.'

To be his Leman and his Ladie trew :
 But when all this he nothing saw preuaile,
 With harder meanes he cast her to subdew,
 And with sharpe threatens her often did assaile,
 So thinking for to make her stubborne courage quaille.

To dreadfull shapes he did himselfe transforme,
 Now like a Gyant, now like to a feend,
 Then like a Centaure, then like to a storme,
 Raging within the waues : thereby he weend
 Her will to win vnto his wished end. 370
 But when with feare, nor fauour, nor with all
 He else could doe, he saw himselfe esteemd,
 Downe in a Dongeon deepe he let her fall,
 And threatned there to make her his eternall thrall. /

Eternall thraldome was to her more lief,
 Then losse of chaftitie, or chaunge of loue :
 Die had she rather in tormenting grieue,
 Then any should of falseneffe her reproue,
 Or loofeneffe, that she lightly did remoue.
 Most vertuous virgin, glory be thy meed, 380
 And crowne of heauenly praise with Saints aboute,
 Where most sweet hymmes of this thy famous deed
 Are still emongst them song, that far my rymes exceed.

Fit song of Angels caroled to bee ;
 But yet what so my feeble Muse can frame,
 Shall be t'aduance thy goodly chaftitee,
 And to enroll thy memorable name,

l. 361, 'Lady': l. 364, 'assaile': l. 365, 'courage quaille': l. 367,
 'Gyaunt': l. 370, 'ceend': l. 372, 'dis': l. 377, 'Dye': l. 379, 'loofenes':
 l. 381, 'prayse . . . Saintes': l. 384, for ; .

In th'heart of euery honourable Dame,
 That they thy vertuous deedes may imitate,
 And be partakers of thy endlesse fame. 390
 It yrkes me, leaue thee in this wofull state,
 To tell of *Satyrane*, where I him left of late.

Who hauing ended with that *Squire of Dames*
 A long discourse of his aduentures vaine,
 The which himfelfe, then Ladies more defames,
 And finding not th'*Hyena* to be flaine,
 With that same *Squyre*, returned backe againe
 To his first way. And as they forward went,
 They spyde a knight faire pricking on the plaine,
 As if he were on some aduenture bent, 400
 And in his port appeared manly hardiment.

Sir *Satyrane* him towards did addresse,
 To weet, what wight he was, and what his quest :
 And comming nigh, eftsoones he gan to gesse
 Both by the burning hart, which on his brest
 He / bare, and by the colours in his creft,
 That *Paridell* it was. Tho to him yode,
 And him saluting, as beseemed best,
 Gan first inquire of tydings farre abroad ;
 And afterwarde, on what aduenture now he rode. 410

Who thereto answering, said ; The tydings bad,
 Which now in Faerie court all men do tell,
 Which turned hath great mirth, to mourning fad,
 Is the late ruine of proud *Marinell*,

l. 391, 'Yt': l. 393, '*Squyre*,' and so l. 397: l. 394, '*vayne*,' and so 'y' for
 'i' in rhyme-words of the stanza: l. 397, '*retourned back*': l. 399, '*fayre*':
 l. 402, '*towards*': l. 409, '*tydinges*,' and so l. 411: l. 412, '*Faery . . . doe*.'

And fuddein parture of faire *Florimell*,
 To find him forth : and after her are gone
 All the braue knights, that doen in armes excell,
 To fauegard her, ywandred all alone ;
 Emongft the reft my lot (vnworthy) is to be one.

Ah gentle knight (faid then Sir *Satyrane*) 420
 Thy labour all is loft, I greatly dread,
 That haft a thankleffe feruice on thee ta'ne,
 And offrest facrifice vnto the dead :
 For dead, I furely doubt, thou maift aread
 Henceforth for euer *Florimell* to be.
 That all the noble knights of *Maydenhead*,
 Which her ador'd, may fore repent with me,
 And all faire Ladies may for euer fory be.

Which words when *Paridell* had heard, his hew
 Gan greatly chaunge, and seem'd difmayd to bee ;
 Then faid, Faire Sir, how may I weene it trew, 431
 That ye doe tell in fuch vncertaintee ?
 Or fpeake ye of report, or did ye fee
 Iuft caufe of dread, that makes ye doubt fo fore ?
 For perdie elfe how mote it euer bee,
 That euer hand fhould dare for to engore
 Her noble blood ? the heauens fuch crueltie abhore. /

Thefe eyes did fee, that they will euer rew
 T'haue feene, (quoth he) when as a monftrous beaft

l. 417, '*knights*': l. 419, '*lott*' and '*vnworthy*': l. 424, '*surely*'—
 Upton would read '*forely*,' but see Glossary s.v.: l. 425, '*bee*,' and so
 double *e* in rhyme-words of the stanza: l. 429, '*wordes*': l. 430, '*chaung*
 . . . *seemd difmaid*': l. 431, '*Fayre*': l. 432, '*uncerteintee*': l. 435,
 '*elles*': l. 437, '*blood . . . heuens*': l. 439, '*To haue . . . Quoth . . .*
mōftrous.'

The Palfrey, whereon she did trauell, flew, 440
 And of his bowels made his bloudie feast :
 Which speaking token sheweth at the least
 Her certaine losse, if not her sure decay :
 Besides, that more suspition encreast,
 I found her golden girdle cast astray,
 Distaund with durt and bloud, as relique of the pray.

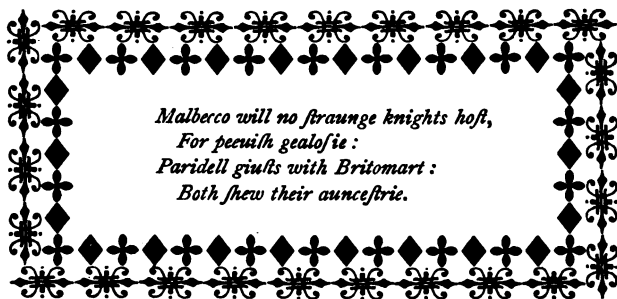
Aye me, (said *Paridell*) the signes be sad,
 And but God turne the same to good soothsay,
 That Ladies safetie is fore to be drad :
 Yet will I not forsake my forward way, 450
 Till triall doe more certaine truth bewray.
 Faire Sir (quoth he) well may it you succeed,
 Ne long shall *Satyrane* behind you stay,
 But to the rest, which in this Quest proceed
 My labour adde, and be partaker of their speed.

Ye noble knights (said then the *Squire of Dames*)
 Well may ye speed in so praiseworthy paine :
 But fith the Sunne now ginnes to flake his beames,
 In deawy vapours of the westerne maine,
 And lose the teme out of his weary waine, 460
 Mote not mislike you also to abate
 Your zealous hast, till morrow next againe
 Both light of heauen, and strength of men relate :
 Which if ye please, to yonder castle turne your gate.

l. 441, 'bloody': l. 443, 'certeine': l. 444, 'suspicion': l. 446, 'blood':
 l. 447, 'Ay . . . fadd': l. 448, 'sooth say': l. 449, 'dradd': l. 451,
 'certeine': l. 452, 'qd. . . . succed': l. 456, 'Squyre': l. 457, 'ye
 speede . . . payne,' and so 'y' for 'i' in rhyme-words of the stanza, except
 l. 462: l. 463, 'heuen.'

That counsell pleased well ; fo all yfere
 Forth marched to a Castle them before,
 Where soone arriuing, they restrained were
 Of readie entrance, which ought euermore
 To / errant knightes be commun : wondrous fore
 Thereat displeas'd they were, till that young Squire
 Gan them informe the caufe, why that same dore
 Was shut to all, which lodging did desire :
 The which to let you weet, will further time require.

Cant. IX.



REdoubted knights, and honorable Dames,
 To whom I leuell all my labours end,
 Right fore I feare, least with vnworthy blames
 This odious argument my rimes should shend,
 Or ought your goodly patience offend, 10

- l. 467, 'arryuing': l. 468, 'ready entraunce': l. 469, 'commune':
 l. 470, 'Squyre': l. 472, 'desyre': l. 473, 'requyre.'
 l. 3, 'gealofy': l. 5, 'auncestry': l. 8, 'vnworthie': l. 9, 'rymes.'

Whiles of a wanton Lady I do write,
Which with her loofe incontinence doth blend
The shyning glory of your foueraigne light,
And knighthood fowle defaced by a faithlesse knight.

But neuer let th'ensample of the bad
Offend the good : for good by paragone
Of euill, may more notably be rad,
As white seemes fairer, macht with black attone ;
Ne all are shamed by the fault of one ;
For lo in heauen, whereas all goodnesse is, 20
Emongst the Angels, a whole legione
Of wicked Sprights did fall from happy blis ;
What wonder then, if one of women all did mis ? /

Then listen Lordings, if ye list to weet
The cause, why *Satyrane* and *Paridell*
Mote not be entertaynd, as seemed meet,
Into that Castle (as that Squire does tell.)
Therein a cancred crabbed Carle does dwell,
That has no skill of Court nor courtesie,
Ne cares, what men say of him ill or well ; 30
For all his dayes he drownes in priuitie,
Yet has full large to liue, and spend at libertie.

But all his mind is set on mucky pelfe,
To hoord vp heapes of euill gotten masse,
For which he others wrongs, and wreckes himselfe ;
Yet is he lincked to a louely lasse,
Whose beauty doth her bounty far surpasse,
The which to him both far vnequall yeares,
And also far vnlike conditions has ;

l. 11, 'doe': l. 13, 'foueraigne': l. 18, 'fayrer . . . attonce': l. 20, 'heuen . . . goodnes': l. 22, 'Sprighites': l. 27, 'Squyre.'

For she does ioy to play emongst her peares, 40
And to be free from hard restraint and gealous feares.

But he is old, and withered like hay,
Vnfit faire Ladies seruice to supply ;
The priuie guilt whereof makes him alway
Suspect her truth, and keepe continuall spy
Vpon her with his other blinkt eye ;
Ne suffreth he resort of liuing wight
Approch to her, ne keepe her company,
But in clofe bowre her mewes from all mens sight,
Depriu'd of kindly ioy and naturall delight. 50

Malbecco he, and *Hellenore* she hight,
Vnfitly yokt together in one teeme :
That is the cause, why neuer any knight
Is suffred here to enter, but he feeme
Such, / as no doubt of him he neede misdeeme.
Thereat Sir *Satyrane* gan smile, and say ;
Extremely mad the man I surely deeme,
That weenes with watch and hard restraint to stay
A womans will, which is disposd to go astray.

In vaine he feares that, which he cannot shonne : 60
For who wotes not, that womans subtiltyes
Can guilen *Argus*, when she list misdonne ?
It is not yron bandes, nor hundred eyes,
Nor brafen walls, nor many wakefull spyes,
That can withhold her wilfull wandring feet ;
But fast good will with gentle curtesyes,

l. 41, 'refraynt' : l. 52, : put for, of '90 and '96 : l. 54, 'Is' misprinted
'It' in '96 : l. 56, 'smyle' : l. 58, 'refraynt' : l. 62, 'guylen . . . disdonne' :
l. 65, , for ; : l. 66, 'courtesyes.'



And timely seruice to her pleasures meet
May her perhaps containe, that else would algates fleet.

Then is he not more mad (saide *Paridell*)
That hath himfelfe vnto fuch seruice fold, 70
In dolefull thraldome all his dayes to dwell ?
For fure a foole I do him firmly hold,
That loues his fetters, though they were of gold.
But why do we deuife of others ill,
Whiles thus we fuffer this fame dotard old,
To keepe vs out, in fcorne of his owne will,
And rather do not ranfack all, and him felfe kill ?

Nay let vs firft (saide *Satyrane* entreat
The man by gentle meanes, to let vs in,
And afterwarde affray with cruell threat, 80
Ere that we to efforce it do begin :
Then if all fayle, we will by force it win,
And eke reward the wretch for his mēfprife,
As may be worthy of his haynous fin.
That counsell pleafed : then *Paridell* did rife,
And to the Caſtle gate approcht in quiet wife./

Whereat foft knocking, entrance he defyrd.
The good man felfe, which then the Porter playd,
Him answered, that all were now retyrd
Vnto their reſt, and all the keyes conuayd 90
Vnto their maifter, who in bed was layd,
That none him durſt awake out of his dreame ;
And therefore them of patience gently prayd.
Then *Paridell* began to chaunge his theme,
And threatned him with force & puniſhment extreme.

l. 69, 'ſayd,' and ſo l. 78 : l. 72, 'doe,' and ſo ll. 74, 81 : l. 75, 'Whyles.'

But all in vaine ; for nought mote him relent,
 And now so long before the wicket fast
 They wayted, that the night was forward spent,
 And the faire welkin fowly ouercast,
 Gan blowen vp a bitter stormy blast, 100
 With shoure and hayle so horrible and dred,
 That this faire many were compeld at last,
 To fly for succour to a little shed,
 The which beside the gate for swine was ordered.

It fortun'd, soone after they were gone,
 Another knight, whom tempest thither brought,
 Came to that Castle, and with earnest mone,
 Like as the rest, late entrance deare besought ;
 But like so as the rest he prayd for nought,
 For flatly he of entrance was refusd. 110
 Sorely thereat he was displeas'd, and thought
 How to auenge himselfe so fore abus'd,
 And euermore the Carle of curtesie accus'd.

But to auoyde th'intollerable flowre,
 He was compeld to seeke some refuge neare,
 And to that shed, to shrowd him from the showre,
 He came, which full of guests he found whyleare,
 So / as he was not let to enter there :
 Whereat he gan to wex exceeding wroth,
 And swore, that he would lodge with them yfere,
 Or them dislodge, all were they lief or loth ; 121
 And so defide them each, and so defide them both.

l. 101, 'shoure' : l. 104, 'swyne' : l. 106, 'thether' : l. 110, . for , of '90
 and '96 : l. 113, 'courtesie' : l. 121, 'dislodge' : l. 122, 'so defyde'—the 'so'
 dropped in '96 : *ib.*, 'defyde,' and so l. 131.

Both were full loth to leaue that needfull tent,
 And both full loth in darkenesse to debate ;
 Yet both full liefc him lodging to haue lent,
 And both full liefc his boasting to abate ;
 But chiefly *Paridell* his hart did grate,
 To heare him threaten so despightfully.
 As if he did a dogge to kenell rate,
 That durst not barke ; and rather had he dy, 130
 Then when he was defide, in coward corner ly.

Tho hastily remounting to his steed,
 He forth issfew'd ; like as a boistrous wind,
 Which in th'earthcs hollow caues hath long bin hid,
 And shut vp fast within her prifons blind,
 Makes the huge element against her kind
 To moue, and tremble as it were agast,
 Vntill that it an issfew forth may find ;
 Then forth it breakes, and with his furious blast
 Confounds both land & seas, and fkyes doth ouercast.

Their steel-hed speares they strongly coucht, and met
 Together with impetuous rage and forfe, 142
 That with the terrour of their fierce affret,
 They rudely droue to ground both man and horfe,
 That each awhile lay like a fencelesse corfe.
 But *Paridell* fore brused with the blow,
 Could not arise, the counterchaunge to scorse,
 Till that young Squire him reared from below ;
 Then drew he his bright sword, & gan about him
 throw. /

l. 133, 'boystrous winde' : l. 134, 'ben' : l. 136, 'kinde' : l. 138, 'finde' :
 l. 148, 'Squyre.'

But *Satyrane* forth stepping, did them stay 150
 And with faire treatie pacifide their ire,
 Then when they were accorded from the fray,
 Against that Castles Lord they gan conspire,
 To heape on him dew vengeance for his hire.
 They bene agreed, and to the gates they goe
 To burne the same with vnquenchable fire,
 And that vncurtious Carle their commune foe
 To do fowle death to dye, or wrap in grievous woe.

Malbecco seeing them resolu'd in deed
 To flame the gates, and hearing them to call 160
 For fire in earnest, ran with fearefull speed,
 And to them calling from the castle wall,
 Befought them humbly, him to beare with all,
 As ignoraunt of seruants bad abuse,
 And slacke attendaunce vnto straungers call.
 The knights were willing all things to excuse,
 Though nought beleu'd, & entraunce late did not refuse.

They bene ybrought into a comely bowre,
 And seru'd of all things that mote needfull bee ;
 Yet secretly their hoste did on them lowre, 170
 And welcomde more for feare, then charitee ;
 But they dissembled, what they did not see,
 And welcomed themselues. Each gan vndight
 Their garments wet, and weary armour free,
 To dry them selues by *Vulcanes* flaming light,
 And eke their lately bruized parts to bring in plight.

l. 151, 'treaty . . . yre': l. 155, 'bene,' and so l. 168: l. 158, 'doe . . .
 dye': l. 159, 'resolud': l. 161, 'fearefull': l. 164, 'ignorant': l. 165,
 , for: l. 169, 'serud': l. 174, 'wett.'

And eke that straunger knight emongst the rest ;
 Was for like need enforst to difaray :
 Tho whenas vailed was her loftie creft,
 Her golden locks, that were in tramels gay 180
 Vpbounden, / did them felues adowne display,
 And raught vnto her heeles ; like funny beames,
 That in a cloud their light did long time stay,
 Their vapour vaded, shew their golden gleames,
 And through the perfant aire shoote forth their azure
 streames.

She also dofte her heauy haberieon,
 Which the faire feature of her limbs did hyde,
 And her well plighted frock, which she did won
 To tucke about her shorth, when she did ryde,
 She low let fall, that flowd from her lanck syde 190
 Downe to her foot, with carelesse modestee,
 Then of them all she plainly was espyde,
 To be a woman wight, vnwift to bee,
 The fairest woman wight, that euer eye did see.

Like as *Minerua*, being late returnd
 From slaughter of the Giaunts conquered ;
 Where proud *Encelade*, whose wide nosethrills burnd
 With breathed flames, like to a furnace red,
 Transfixd with the speare, downe tombled ded
 From top of *Hemus*, by him heaped hye ; 200
 Hath loofd her helmet from her lofty hed,

l. 179, 'lofty': l. 180, 'tramells': l. 184, 'shewe': l. 185, 'perfant' is
 'perfant' in 1609, and 'presant' in 1611: l. 186, 'Shae': l. 194, 'cie':
 l. 195, 'Bellona': l. 198, 'redd,' and so double *d* in the stanza's rhyme-
 words: l. 199, 'her.'

And her *Gorgonian* shield gins to vntye
From her left arme, to rest in glorious victorie.

Which whenas they beheld, they smitten were
With great amazement of so wondrous sight,
And each on other, and they all on her
Stood gazing, as if suddein great affright
Had them surprised. At last auizing right,
Her goodly personage and glorious hew,
Which they so much mistooke, they tooke delight 210
In their first errour, and yet still anew
With wonder of her beauty fed their hungry vew./

Yet note their hungry vew be fatisfide,
But seeing still the more desir'd to see,
And euer firmly fixed did abide
In contemplation of diuinitie:
But they meruail[e]d at her cheualree,
And noble prowesse, which they had approued,
That much they faynd to know, who she mote bee ;
Yet none of all them her thereof amoued, 220
Yet euery one her likte, and euery one her loued.

And *Paridell* though partly discontent
With his late fall, and fowle indignity,
Yet was soone wonne his malice to relent,
Through gracious regard of her faire eye,
And knightly worth, which he too late did try,
Yet tried did adore. Supper was dight ;
Then they *Malbecco* prayd of curtesy,

l. 208, '*surprised*': l. 211, '*error* . . . *yett*': l. 212, '*honyry*,' and so
l. 213 : l. 216, '*diuinitee*': l. 218, '*approu'd*,' and so '*d*' for '*ad*' in rhyme-
words of the stanza : l. 225, '*gratious*': l. 228, '*courtesy*.'



That of his Lady they might haue the fight,
And company at meat, to do them more delight. 230

But he to shift their curious request,
Gan causen, why she could not come in place ;
Her crased health, her late recourse to rest,
And humid euening ill for sicke folkes cace :
But none of those excuses could take place ;
Ne would they eate, till she in prefence came.
She came in prefence with right comely grace,
And fairely them saluted, as became,
And shewed her felse in all a gentle curteous Dame.

They fate to meat, and *Satyrane* his chaunce 240
Was her before, and *Paridell* befyde ;
But he him felse fate looking still askaunce,
Gainst *Britomart*, and euer closely eyde
Sir / *Satyrane*, that glaunces might not glyde :
But his blind eye, that fyded *Paridell*,
All his demeafnure from his fight did hyde :
On her faire face so did he feede his fill,
And sent clofe messages of loue to her at will.

And euer and anone, when none was ware,
With speaking lookes, that clofe embassage bore, 250
He rou'd at her, and told his secret care :
For all that art he learned had of yore.

l. 229, 'lady': l. 230, 'doe': l. 231, 'shifte': l. 233, 'helth': l. 234, for : comma (,) : l. 237, 'she': l. 239, 'courteous': l. 241, 'beside,' and so 'i' for 'y' in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 244, 'with'—Dr. Morris records 'that' as of 1609, but it is fetched from '96: l. 245, 'blinde cie . . . fided': l. 246, 'demeafnure' in 1609 is 'demeanure.'

Ne was she ignoraunt of that lewd lore,
 But in his eye his meaning wifely red,
 And with the like him answerd euermore :
 She sent at him one fire dart, whose hed
 Empoisoned was with priuy lust, and gealous dred.

He from that deadly throw made no defence,
 But to the wound his weake hart opened wyde ;
 The wicked engine through false influence, 260
 Past through his eyes, and secretly did glyde
 Into his hart, which it did forely gryde.
 But nothing new to him was that same paine,
 Ne paine at all ; for he so oft had tryde
 The powre thereof, and lou'd so oft in vaine,
 That thing of course he counted, loue to entertaine.

Thenceforth to her he fought to intimate
 His inward grieve, by meanes to him well knowne,
 Now *Bacchus* fruit out of the filuer plate
 He on the table dasht, as ouerthrowne, 270
 Or of the fruitfull liquor ouerflowne,
 And by the dauncing bubbles did diuine,
 Or therein write to let his loue be showne ;
 Which well she red out of the learned line,
 A sacrament prophane in mistery of wine. /

And when so of his hand the pledge she raught,
 The guilty cup she fained to mistake,
 And in her lap did shed her idle draught,
 Shewing desire her inward flame to flake :

l. 253, 'leud' : l. 254, 'redd,' and so double *d* in stanza's rhyme-words :
 l. 255, 'aunswerd' : l. 256, 'Shée . . . fyrie' : l. 261, 'eis' : l. 262,
 'heart' : l. 264, 'ofte' : l. 273, 'lett' : l. 274, 'redd.'

By such clofe signes they secret way did make 280
 Vnto their wills, and one eyes watch escape ;
 Two eyes him needeth, for to watch and wake,
 Who louers will deceiue. Thus was the ape,
 By their faire handling, put into *Malbeccoes* cape.

Now when of meats and drinks they had their fill,
 Purpose was moued by that gentle Dame,
 Vnto those knights aduenturous, to tell
 Of deeds of armes, which vnto them became,
 And euery one his kindred, and his name.
 Then *Paridell*, in whom a kindly pryde 290
 Of gracious speech, and skill his words to frame
 Abounded, being glad of so fit tyde
 Him to commend to her, thus spake, of all well eyde.

Troy, that art now nought, but an idle name,
 And in thine ashes buried low doft lie,
 Though whilome far much greater then thy fame,
 Before that angry Gods, and cruell skye
 Vpon thee heapt a direfull destinie,
 What boots it boast thy glorious descent,
 And fetch from heauen thy great Genealogie, 300
 Sith all thy worthy prayfes being blent,
 Their of-fpring hath embafte, and later glory fhent.

Most famous Worthy of the world, by whome
 That warre was kindled, which did *Troy* inflame,

l. 281, '*eyes*,' and so l. 282 : l. 290, '*pride*,' and so '*i*' for '*y*' in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 291, '*gratious*': l. 292, '*yglad* . . . *fittie*': l. 293, '*al*': l. 297, '*skie*': l. 300, '*heuen* . . . *genealogie*': l. 301, '*worthie*': l. 302, '*of fpring*.'

And stately towres of *Ilion* whilome
 Brought vnto balefull ruine, was by name
 Sir / *Paris* far renowmd through noble fame,
 Who through great prowesse and bold hardinesse,
 From *Lacedæmon* fetcht the fairest Dame,
 That euer *Greece* did boast, or knight possesse, 310
 Whom *Venus* to him gaue for meed of worthinesse.

Faire *Helene*, flowre of beautie excellent,
 And gylond of the mighty Conquerours,
 That madeft many Ladies deare lament
 The heauie losse of their braue Paramours,
 Which they far off beheld from *Troian* toures,
 And saw the fieldes of faire *Scamander* strowne
 With carcafes of noble warrioures,
 Whose fruitlesse liues were vnder furrow fowne,
 And *Xanthus* sandy bankes with bloud all ouerflowne.

From him my linage I deriue aright, 321
 Who long before the ten yeares siege of *Troy*,
 Whiles yet on *Ida* he a shepheard hight,
 On faire *Oenone* got a louely boy,
 Whom for remembraunce of her passed ioy,
 She of his Father *Parijs* did name ;
 Who, after *Greekes* did *Priams* realme destroy,
 Gathred the *Troian* reliques sau'd from flame,
 And with them sayling thence, to th'Isle of *Paros* came.

That was by him cald *Paros*, which before 330
 Hight *Nausa*, there he many yeares did raine,

l. 309, 'sayrest': l. 312, 'Fayre': l. 320, 'blood': l. 325, 'remembrance.'

And built *Nausicle* by the *Pontick* shore,
 The which he dying left next in remaine
 To *Paridas* his sonne.
 From whom I *Paridell* by kin descend ;
 But for faire Ladies loue, and glories gaine,
 My natiue foile haue left, my dayes to spend
 In seewing deeds of armes, my liues and labours end. /

Whenas the noble *Britomart* heard tell
 Of *Troian* warres, and *Priams* Citie sackt, 340
 The ruefull story of Sir *Paridell*,
 She was empaffiond at that piteous act,
 With zelous enuy of Greekes cruell fact,
 Against that nation, from whose race of old
 She heard, that she was lineally extract :
 For noble *Britons* sprong from *Troians* bold,
 And *Troynouant* was built of old *Troyes* ashes cold.

Then fighting soft awhile, at last she thus :
 O lamentable fall of famous towne,
 Which raignd so many yeares victorious, 350
 And of all *Asie* bore the soueraigne crowne,
 In one sad night confumd, and throwen downe :
 What stony hart, that heares thy haplesse fate,
 Is not empierst with deepe compaffiowne,
 And makes ensample of mans wretched state,
 That floures so fresh at morne, and fades at euening late?

Behold, Sir, how your pitifull complaint
 Hath found another partner of your payne :

l. 333, '*lefte*,' and so l. 337: l. 336, '*ladies*': *ib.*, '*glories*'—so '90 and '96, but in 1611, 1679 '*glorious*': l. 338, '*labors*': l. 340, '*citie*': l. 351, '*soueraigne*': l. 356, '&': l. 358, '*found*.'

For nothing may impresse so deare constraint,
 As countries caufe, and commune foes difdayne. 360
 But if it should not grieue you, backe agayne
 To turne your courfe, I would to heare defyre,
 What to *Aeneas* fell ; fith that men fayne
 He was not in the Cities wofull fyre
 Confum'd, but did him felfe to fafetic retyre.

Anchyfes fonne begot of *Venus* faire,
 (Said he,) out of the flames for fafegard fled,
 And with a remnant did to fea repaire,
 Where he through fatall errour long was led
 Full / many yeares, and weetleffe wandered 370
 From fhore to fhore, emongft the *Lybicke* fands,
 Ere reft he found. Much there he fuffered,
 And many perils pafte in forreine lands,
 To faue his people fad from victours vengefull hands.

At laft in *Latium* he did arriue,
 Where he with cruell warre was entertaind
 Of th'inland folke, which fought him backe to driue,
 Till he with old *Latinus* was conftaind,
 To contract wedlock : (fo the fates ordaind.)
 Wedlock contract in bloud, and eke in blood 380
 Accomplifhed, that many deare complaind :
 The riual flaine, the victour through the flood
 Escaped hardly, hardly praifd his wedlock good.

Yet after all, he victour did furuiue,
 And with *Latinus* did the kingdome part.

l. 364, 'cities' : l. 366, 'begott . . . fayre,' and so 'y' l. 368 : l. 371, 'Lybick fandes' : l. 373, 'perilles . . . landes' : l. 374, 'handes' : l. 375, 'arryue' : l. 385, 'kingdom.'

But after when both nations gan to striue,
 Into their names the title to conuart,
 His sonne *Iulus* did from thence depart,
 With all the warlike youth of *Troians* bloud,
 And in long *Alba* plaft his throne apart, 390
 Where faire it florished, and long time it stoud,
 Till *Romulus* renewing it, to *Rome* remoud.

There there (saide *Britomart*) a fresh appeard
 The glory of the later world to spring,
 And *Troy* againe out of her dust was reard,
 To sit in second seat of soueraigne king,
 Of all the world vnder her gouerning.
 But a third kingdome yet is to arise,
 Out of the *Troians* scattered of-spring,
 That in all glory and great enterprife, 400
 Both first and second *Troy* shall dare to equalife. /

It *Troynouant* is hight, that with the waues
 Of wealthy *Thamis* washed is along,
 Vpon whose stubborne necke, whereat he raues
 With roring rage, and fore him selfe does throng,
 That all men feare to tempt his billowes strong,
 She fastned hath her foot, which standes so hy,
 That it a wonder of the world is song
 In forreine landes, and all which passen by,
 Beholding it from far, do thinke it threatens the skye.

The *Troian Brute* did first that Citie found, 411
 And Hygate made the meare thereof by West,

l. 396, 'sitt . . . soueraine': l. 398, 'kingdom': l. 399, 'of spring':
 l. 404, 'necks': l. 410, 'farre doe': l. 411, 'citie found': l. 412—in '96
 'gate' follows 'Hygate' by error: *ib.*, 'west'

And *Ouert* gate by North : that is the bound
Toward the land ; two riuers bound the rest.
So huge a scope at first him seemed best,
To be the compasse of his kingdomes feat :
So huge a mind could not in lesser rest,
Ne in small meares containe his glory great,
That *Albion* had conquered first by warlike feat.

Ah fairest Lady knight, (saide *Paridell*) 420
Pardon I pray my heedlesse ouerfight,
Who had forgot that, whilome I heard tell
From aged *Mnemon* ; for my wits bene light.
Indeed he saide (if I remember right,)
That of the antique *Troian* stocke, there grew
Another plant, that raught to wondrous hight,
And far abroad his mighty branches threw,
Into the vtmost Angle of the world he knew.

For that fame *Brute*, whom much he did aduaunce
In all his speach, was *Syluius* his sonne, 430
Whom hauing slaine, through luckles arrowes glaunce
He fled for feare of that he had misdonne,
Or / else for shame, so fowle reproch to shonne,
And with him led to the sea an youthly trayne,
Where wearie wandring they long time did wonne,
And many fortunes prou'd in th'*Ocean* mayne,
And great aduētures found, that now were lōg to sayne.

At last by fatall course they driuen were
Into an Island spacious and brode,

l. 413, 'bound,' and so l. 414 : l. 422, 'whylome . . . hard' : l. 423, 'bene' : l. 427, 'mightie braunches' : l. 431, 'slain' : l. 433, 'els' : l. 434, 'ledd.'



The furthest North, that did to them appeare : 440
 Which after rest they seeking far abroad,
 Found it the fittest soyle for their abode,
 Fruitfull of all things fit for liuing foode,
 But wholly wast, and void of peoples trode,
 Saue an huge nation of the Geaunts broode,
 That fed on liuing flesh, & druncke mens vitall blood.

Whom he through wearie wars and labours long,
 Subdewd with losse of many Britons bold :
 In which the great Goemagot of strong
 Corineus, and Coulin of Debon old 450
 Were ouerthrowne, and layd on th'earth full cold,
 Which quaked vnder their so hideous masse,
 A famous history to be enrold
 In euerlasting monuments of brasse,
 That all the antique Worthies merits far did passe.

His worke great Troynouant, his worke is eke
 Faire Lincolne, both renowned far away,
 That who from East to West will endlong seeke,
 Cannot two fairer Cities find this day,
 Except Cleopolis : so heard I say 460
 Old Mnemon. Therefore Sir, I greet you well
 Your countrey kin, and you entirely pray
 Of pardon for the strife, which late befell
 Betwixt vs both vnknowne. So ended Paridell. /

But all the while, that he these speeches spent,
 Vpon his lips hong faire Dame Hellenore,

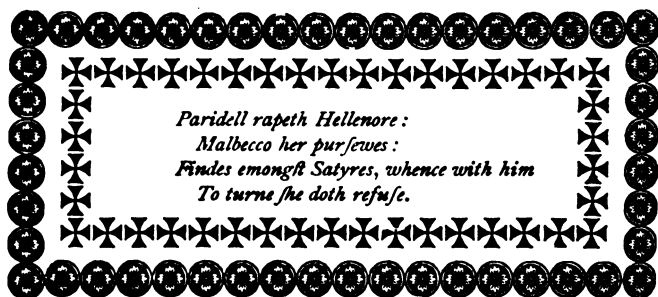
l. 441, 'And after rest' in 1609: *ib.*, 'farre': l. 443, 'things fit':
 l. 444, 'waste': l. 446, 'drunk': l. 451, 'laide': l. 453, 'bee': l. 465,
 'speeches.'

With vigilant regard, and dew attent,
 Fashioning worlds of fancies euermore
 In her fraile wit, that now her quite forlore :
 The whiles vnwares away her wondring eye, 470
 And greedy eares her weake hart from her bore :
 Which he perceiuing, euer priuily
 In speaking, many false belgardes at her let fly.

So long these knights discourfed diuerfly,
 Of straunge affaires, and noble hardiment,
 Which they had past with mickle ieopardy,
 That now the humid night was farforth spent,
 And heauenly lampes were halfendeale ybrent :
 Which th'old man seeing well, who too long thought
 Euery discourse and euery argument, 480
 Which by the houres he meafured, befought
 Them go to rest. So all vnto their bowres were brought.

l. 468, 'worldes' : l. 474, 'knightes' : l. 478, 'heuenly' : l. 479, 'wel
 . . . lög.'

Cant. X.



THe morow next, so soone as *Phæbus* Lamp
 Bewrayed had the world with early light,
 And fresh *Aurora* had the shady damp
 Out of the goodly heauen amoured quight,
 Faire / *Britomart* and that same *Faerie* knight 10
 Vprose, forth on their iourney for to wend : . . .
 But *Paridell* complaynd, that his late fight
 With *Britomart*, so fore did him offend,
 That ryde he could not, till his hurts he did amend.

So forth they far'd, but he behind them stayd,
 Maulgre his host, who grudged grievously,
 To house a guest, that would be needes obayd,
 And of his owne him left not liberty :
 Might wanting measure moueth surquedry.
 Two things he feared, but the third was death ; 20
 That fierce young mans vnuly maistry ;

l. 3, '*Malbecco* . . . *pursues*': l. 4, '*Fyndes*': l. 9, '*heuen*': l. 10, '*Faery*': l. 15, '*foorth*': l. 16, '*griuously*': l. 21, '*fiers* . . . *maystry*.'

His money, which he lou'd as liuing breath ;
And his faire wife, whom honest long he kept vneath.

But patience perforce he must abie,
What fortune and his fate on him will lay,
Fond is the feare, that findes no remedie ;
Yet warily he watcheth euery way,
By which he feareth euill happen may :
So th'euill thinkes by watching to preuent ;
Ne doth he suffer her, nor night, nor day, 30
Out of his fight her selfe once to absent.
So doth he punish her and eke himselfe torment.

But *Paridell* kept better watch, then hee,
A fit occasion for his turne to find :
Falne loue, why do men say, thou canst not see,
And in their foolish fancie feigne thee blind,
That with thy charmes the sharpest fight doest bind,
And to thy will abuse ? Thou walkest free,
And seest euery secret of the mind ;
Thou seest all, yet none at all sees thee ; 40
All that is by the working of thy Deitee. /

So / perfect in that art was *Paridell*,
That he *Malbeccoës* halfen eye did wyle,
His halfen eye he wiled wondrous well,
And *Hellenors* both eyes did eke beguyle,
Both eyes and hart attonce, during the while
That he there sojourned his wounds to heale ;
That *Cupid* selfe it seeing, close did smyle,

l. 34, '*finde*,' and so '*e*' in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 36, '*fancy*' :
l. 43, '*Malbeccoës*'—misprinted '*Melbeccoës*' in '96 : l. 47, '*woundes*.'

To weet how he her loue away did steale,
And bad, that none their ioyous treason should reueale.

The learned louer lost no time nor tyde, 51
That least auantage mote to him afford,
Yet bore so faire a faile, that none espyde
His secreet drift, till he her layd aboard.
When so in open place, and commune bord,
He fortun'd her to meet, with commune speach
He courted her, yet bayted euery word,
That his vngentle hoste n'ote him appeach
Of vile vngentlenesse, or hospitages breach.

But when apart (if euer her apart) 60
He found, then his false engins fast he plyde,
And all the fleights vnbofomd in his hart ;
He sigh'd, he sobd, he swownd, he perdy dyde,
And cast himselfe on ground her fast besyde :
Tho when againe he him bethought to liue,
He wept, and wayld, and false laments belyde,
Saying, but if the Mercie would him giue
That he mote algates dye, yet did his death forgiue.

And otherwhiles with amorous delights,
And pleasing toyes he would her entertaine, 70
Now singing sweetly, to surprise her sprights,
Now making layes of loue and louers paine,
Bransles, / Ballads, virelayes, and verses vaine ;
Oft purposes, oft riddles he deuysd,
And thousands like, which flowed in his braine,
With which he fed her fancie, and entysd
To take to his new loue, and leaue her old despyd.

l. 53, '*saile*' : l. 69, '*otherwhyles*' : l. 76, '*fancy*' : l. 77, '*with*.'

And euery where he might, and euery while
 He did her seruice dewtifull, and sewed
 At hand with humble pride, and pleasing guile, 80
 So clofely yet, that none but she it vewed,
 Who well perceiued all, and all indewed.
 Thus finely did he his false nets dispred,
 With which he many weake harts had subdewed
 Of yore, and many had ylike misled :
 What wonder then, if she were likewise carried ?

No fort so fenfible, no wals so strong,
 But that continuall battery will riue,
 Or daily siege through dispuruayance long,
 And lacke of reſkewes will to parley driue ; 90
 And Peace, that vnto parley eare will giue,
 Will ſhortly yield it ſelfe, and will be made
 The vaſſall of the victors will byliue :
 That ſtratageme had oftentimes affayd
 This crafty Paramoure, and now it plaine diſplayd.

For through his traines he her intrapped hath,
 That ſhe her loue and hart hath wholly fold
 To him, without regard of gaine, or ſcath,
 Or care of credite, or of huſband old,
 Whom ſhe hath vow'd to dub a faire Cucquold. 100
 Nought wants but time and place, which ſhortly ſhee
 Deuized hath, and to her louer told.
 It pleaſed well. So well they both agree ;
 So readie rype to ill, ill wemens counſels bee. /

l. 78, 'euerie while' : l. 79, 'ſewd,' and ſo 'd' for 'ed' in rhyme-words of the ſtanza : l. 89, 'diſpuruayaunce' : l. 90, , for ; : l. 91, 'Peace' : l. 92, 'yeeld' : l. 100, 'ſayre' : l. 101, 'ſc' : l. 102, , for (.) .

Darke was the Euening, fit for louers stealth,
 When chaunst *Malbecco* busie be elſewhere,
 She to his cloſet went, where all his wealth
 Lay hid : thereof ſhe countleſſe ſummes did reare,
 The which ſhe meant away with her to beare ;
 The reſt ſhe fyr'd for ſport, or for deſpight ; 110
 As *Hellene*, when ſhe ſaw aloſt appeare
 The *Troiane* flames, and reach to heauens hight
 Did clap her hands, and ioyed at that dolefull fight.

This ſecond *Hellene*, faire Dame *Hellenore*,
 The whiles her huſband ranne with ſory haſte,
 To quench the flames which ſhe had tyn'd before,
 Laught at his fooliſh labour ſpent in waſte ;
 And ranne into her louers armes right faſt ;
 Where ſtreight embraced, ſhe to him did cry,
 And call aloud for helpe, ere helpe were paſt ; 120
 For loe that Gueſt would beare her forcibly,
 And meant to rauiſh her, that rather had to dy.

The wretched man hearing her call for ayd,
 And readie ſeeing him with her to fly,
 In his diſquiet mind was much diſmayd :
 But when againe he backward caſt his eye,
 And ſaw the wicked fire ſo furiously
 Conſume his hart, and ſcorch his Idoles face,
 He was therewith diſtreſſed diuerſly,
 Ne wiſt he how to turne, nor to what place ; 130
 Was neuer wretched man in ſuch a wofull cace.

l. 106, '*Malbecco*'—misprinted '*Melbecco*' in '96: l. 112, '*heuens*':
 l. 114, '*Helene, ſayre*': l. 116, . for , : l. 120, '*lowd*': l. 124, '*ready*':
 l. 126, '*backward*': l. 129, '*diuerſely*': l. 130, , for ; .

Ay when to him she cryde, to her he turnd,
 And left the fire ; loue money ouercame :
 But when he marked, how his money burnd,
 He left his wife ; money did loue disclame :
 Both / was he loth to loofe his loued Dame,
 And loth to leaue his liefest pelfe behind,
 Yet fith he n'ote saue both, he sau'd that same,
 Which was the dearest to his donghill mind,
 The God of his desire, the ioy of misers blind. 140

Thus whilest all things in troublous vprore were,
 And all men busie to suppress the flame,
 The louing couple need no reskew feare,
 But leasure had, and libertie to frame
 Their purpost flight, free from all mens reclame ;
 And Night, the patronesse of loue-stealth faire,
 Gaue them safe conduct, till to end they came :
 So bene they gone yfeare, a wanton paire
 Of louers loofely knit, where list them to repaire.

Soone as the cruell flames yslaked were, 150
Malbecco seeing, how his losse did lye,
 Out of the flames, which he had quencht whylere
 Into huge waues of grieve and gealosye
 Full deepe emplonged was, and drowned nye,
 Twixt inward doole and felonous despight ;
 He rau'd, he wept, he stamp, he lowd did cry,
 And all the passions, that in man may light,
 Did him attonce oppresse, and vex his caytiue spright.

L. 137, '*behinde*' : L. 139, '*dounghill minde*' : L. 140, '*blinde*' : L. 143, '*neede*' : L. 144, '*liberty*' : L. 146, '*fayre*,' and so '*y*' for '*i*' in rhyme-words of the stanza : L. 148, '*beene* . . . *yfere*' : L. 155, , for ; .

Long thus he chawd the cud of inward griefe,
 And did consume his gall with anguish fore, 160
 Still when he mused on his late mischiefe,
 Then still the smart thereof increased more,
 And seem'd more grievous, then it was before :
 At last when sorrow he saw bootéd nought,
 Ne griefe might not his loue to him restore,
 He gan deuise, how her he reskew mought,
 Ten thousand wayes he cast in his confused thought. /

At last resoluing, like a pilgrim pore,
 To sea[r]ch her forth, where so she might be fond,
 And bearing with him treasure in close store, 170
 The rest he leaues in ground : So takes in hond
 To seeke her endlong, both by sea and lond.
 Long he her fought, he fought her farre and nere,
 And euery where that he mote vnderstond,
 Of knights and ladies any meetings were,
 And of eachone he met, he tydings did inquere.

But all in vaine, his woman was too wise,
 Euer to come into his clouch againe,
 And he too simple euer to surprise
 The iolly *Paridell*, for all his paine. 180
 One day, as he forpasséd by the plaine
 With weary pace, he farre away espièd
 A couple, seeming well to be his twaine,
 Which houed close vnder a forrest fide,
 As if they lay in wait, or else themfelues did hide.

l. 162, 'So' : l. 163, 'seemd' : l. 168, 'Pilgrim' : l. 170, 'search' in '90 ;
 but qq. 'seach' = fetch—printed 'seach' in '96 : l. 173, 'far,' and so l. 182 :
 l. 176, 'mett . . . tidings' : l. 181, 'hee,' and so l. 186 : l. 184, 'forest' :
 l. 185, 'els them felues.'

Well weened he, that those the fame mote bee,
 And as he better did their shape auize,
 Him seemed more their manner did agree ;
 For th'one was armed all in warlike wize,
 Whom, to be *Paridell* he did deuize ; 190
 And th'other all yclad in garments light,
 Discolour'd like to womanish disguise,
 He did resemble to his Ladie bright ;
 And euer his faint hart much earned at the fight.

And euer faine he towards them would goe,
 But yet durst not for dread approchen nie,
 But stood aloofe, vnweeting what to doe ;
 Till that prickt forth with loues extremitie,
 That / is the father of fowle gealofy,
 He closely nearer crept, the truth to weet : 200
 But, as he nigher drew, he easily
 Might scerne, that it was not his sweetest sweet,
 Ne yet her Belamour, the partner of his sheet.

But it was scornefull *Braggadocchio*,
 That with his seruant *Trompart* houred there,
 Sith late he fled from his too earnest foe :
 Whom such when as *Malbecco* spied clere,
 He turned backe, and would haue fled arere ;
 Till *Trompart* ronning hastily, him did stay,
 And bad before his soueraine Lord appere : 210
 That was him loth, yet durst he not gainefay,
 And comming him before, low louted on the lay.

l. 188, 'maner' : l. 191, 'at' : l. 192, 'Discolourd' : l. 193, , for ; :
 l. 194—1609 improves to 'yearned' : l. 197, , for ; : l. 198, 'extremity' :
 l. 204, 'Braggadochio' : l. 207, 'whenas' : l. 209, 'hastely.'

The Boaster at him sternely bent his browe,
 As if he could haue kild him with his looke,
 That to the ground him meekely made to bowe,
 And awfull terror deepe into him strooke,
 That euery member of his bodie quooke.
 Said he, thou man of nought, what doest thou here,
 Vnfitly furnisht with thy bag and booke,
 Where I expected one with shield and spere, 220
 To proue some deedes of armes vpon an equall pere.

The wretched man at his imperious speach,
 Was all abasht, and low prostrating, said ;
 Good Sir, let not my rudenesse be no breach
 Vnto your patience, ne be ill ypaid ;
 For I vnwares this way by fortune straid,
 A filly Pilgrim driuen to distresse,
 That seeke a Lady,—There he suddein staid,
 And did the rest with grievous sighes suppressse, 229
 While teares stood in his eies, few drops of bitternesse. /

What Ladie, man ? (said *Trompart*) take good hart,
 And tell thy grieve, if any hidden lye ;
 Was neuer better time to shew thy smart,
 Then now, that noble succour is thee by,
 That is the whole worlds commune remedy.
 That chearefull word his weake hart much did cheare,
 And with vaine hope his spirits faint supply,
 That bold he said ; ô most redoubted Pere,
 Vouchsafe with mild regard a wretches cace to heare.

L. 217, 'body': L. 221, 'deeds': L. 224, 'rudenes'—misprinted in '96
 'rudenesse': L. 228, — supplied—no punctuation in '90: L. 231, 'Lady':
 L. 234, 'succor': L. 236, 'cheerful . . . weak heart': L. 238, 'sayd, O'.

Then fighting fore, It is not long (saïd he) 240
 Sith I enioyd the gentlest Dame aliue ;
 Of whom a knight, no knight at all perdee,
 But shame of all, that doe for honor striue,
 By treacherous deceit did me depriue ;
 Through open outrage he her bore away,
 And with fowle force vnto his will did driue,
 Which all good knights, that armes do beare this day,
 Are bound for to reuenge, and punish if they may.

And you most noble Lord, that can and dare
 Redresse the wrong of miserable wight, 250
 Cannot employ your most victorious speare
 In better quarrell, then defence of right,
 And for a Ladie gainst a faithlesse knight ;
 So shall your glory be aduaunced much,
 And all faire Ladies magnifie your might,
 And eke my selfe, albe I simple such,
 Your worthy paine shall well reward with guerdon rich.

With that out of his bouget forth he drew
 Great store of treasure, therewith him to tempt ;
 But he on it lookt scornefully askew, 260
 As much disdeigning to be so misdempt,
 Or / a war-monger to be basely nempt ;
 And saïd ; thy offers base I greatly loth,
 And eke thy words vncourteous and vnkempt ;
 I tread in dust thee and thy money both,
 That, were it not for shame,—So turned from him wroth.

l. 240, '*saide*': l. 248, '*bound*': l. 253, '*Lady*,' and , for ;: l. 254, '*bee*': l. 255, '*magnify*': l. 256, '*albee*': l. 257, '*uel*': l. 263, '*says*': l. 266, — supplied.

But *Trompart*, that his maisters humor knew,
 In lofty lookes to hide an humble mind,
 Was inly tickled with that golden vew,
 And in his eare him rounded close behind : 270
 Yet stoupt he not, but lay still in the wind,
 Waiting aduauntage on the pray to fease ;
 Till *Trompart* lowly to the ground inclind,
 Befought him his great courage to appease,
 And pardon simple man, that rash did him displeafe.

Bigge looking like a doughtie Doucepere,
 At last he thus ; Thou clod of vilest clay,
 I pardon yield, and with thy rudenesse beare ;
 But weete henceforth, that all that golden pray,
 And all that else the vaine world vaunten may, 280
 I loath as dounge, ne deeme my dew reward :
 Fame is my meed, and glory vertues pray.
 But minds of mortall men are muchell mard,
 And mou'd amisse with massie mucks vnmeet regard.

And more, I graunt to thy great miserie
 Gracious respect, thy wife shall backe be sent,
 And that vile knight, who euer that he bee,
 Which hath thy Lady rest, and knighthood fhent,
 By *Sanglamort* my sword, whose deadly dent
 The bloud hath of so many thousands shed, 290
 I sweare, ere long shall dearely it repent ;

l. 267, 'maistres' : l. 268, 'looks . . . minde' : l. 270, 'rounded' is misprinted in '96 'grounded . . . behinde,' and so *e* in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 272, in '96 projects like first and last l. of the stanza : l. 274, 'corage' : l. 276, 'Big . . . doughty' : l. 277, , for ; : l. 278, 'that with thy rudenes' : l. 280, 'els' : l. 282, 'vertuous'—in 1609 'vertues pay' : l. 284, 'massy' : l. 285, 'misery' : l. 288, 'lady' : l. 290, 'blood . . . shedd,' and so double *d* in rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 291, 'dearly.'

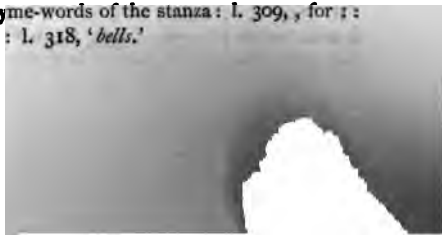
Ne he twixt heauen and earth shall hide his hed,
But soone he shall be found, and shortly doen be ded. /

The foolish man thereat woxe wondrous blith,
As if the word so spoken, were halfe donne,
And humbly thanked him a thousand fith,
That had from death to life him newly wonne.
Tho forth the Boaster marching, braue begonne
His stolen steed to thunder furiously,
As if he heauen and hell would ouerronne, 300
And all the world confound with cruelty,
That much *Malbecco* ioyed in his iollity.

Thus long they three together traueiled,
Through many a wood, and many an vncouth way,
To seeke his wife, that was farre wandered :
But those two fought nought, but the present pray,
To weete the treafure, which he did bewray,
On which their eies and harts were wholly fet,
With purpose, how they might it best betray ; 309
For fith the houre, that first he did them let (whet.
The same behold, therewith their keene desires were

It fortun'd as they together far'd,
They spide, where *Paridell* came pricking fast
Vpon the plaine, the which himselfe prepar'd
To giuft with that braue straunger knight a cast,
As on aduventure by the way he past :
Alone he rode without his Paragone ;
For hauing filcht her bells, her vp he cast

l. 292, 'heuen': l. 293, 'shalbe found': l. 300, 'ouerronne,' but not
'over-ronne' in '96, as Dr. Morris inadvertently records: l. 305, 'far':
l. 308, 'sett,' and so double t in rhyme-words of the stanza: l. 309, 'for':
l. 310, 'houre': l. 311, 'therewith': l. 318, 'bells.'



To the wide world, and let her fly alone,
He nould be clogd. So had he serued many one. 320

The gentle Lady, loofe at randon left,
The greene-wood long did walke, and wander wide
At wilde aduenture, like a forlorne weft,
Till on a day the *Satyres* her espide
Straying / alone withouten groome or guide;
Her vp they tooke, and with them home her led,
With them as houswife euer to abide,
To milke their gotes, and make them cheefe and bred,
And euery one as commune good her handeled.

That shortly she *Malbecco* has forgot, 330
And eke Sir *Paridell*, all were he deare ;
Who from her went to seeke another lot,
And now by fortune was arriued here,
Where those two guilers with *Malbecco* were :
Soone as the oldman saw Sir *Paridell*,
He fainted, and was almost dead with feare,
Ne word he had to speake, his grieve to tell,
But to him louted low, and greeted goodly well.

And after asked him for *Hellenore*,
I take no keepe of her (said *Paridell*) 340
She wonneth in the forrest there before.
So forth he rode, as his aduenture fell ;
The whiles the Boaster from his loftie fell
Faynd to alight, something amisse to mend ;
But the fresh Swayne would not his leasure dwell,

l. 321, 'left,' and so 'e' l. 323 : l. 328, 'milk . . . &': l. 330, 'forgott,'
and so double t l. 332 : l. 340, 'fayd.'

But went his way ; whom when he passed kend,
He vp remounted light, and after faind to wend.

Perdy nay (said *Malbecco*) shall ye not :

But let him passe as lightly, as he came :

For litle good of him is to be got, 350

And mickle perill to be put to shame.

But let vs go to seeke my dearest Dame,

Whom he hath left in yonder forrest wyld :

For of her safety in great doubt I am,

Least saluage beastes her person haue despoyle :

Then all the world is lost, and we in vaine haue toyld. /

They all agree, and forward them adrest :

Ah but (said craftie *Trompart*) weete ye well,

That yonder in that wastefull wildernesse

Huge monsters haunt, and many dangers dwell ; 360

Dragons, and Minotaures, and feedes of hell,

And many wilde woodmen, which robbe and rend

All traouellers ; therefore aduise ye well,

Before ye enterprife that way to wend :

One may his iourney bring too soone to euill end.

Malbecco stopt in great astonishment,

And with pale eyes fast fixed on the rest,

Their counsell crau'd, in daunger imminent.

Said *Trompart*, you that are the most opprest

With burden of great treasure, I thinke best 370

Here for to stay in safetie behind ;

l. 351, 'bee': l. 352, 'goe': l. 353, 'forest': l. 354, 'ame': l. 357, 'They,' misprinted 'The' in '96: *ib.*, 'adrest' in '90 and '96—another example of Spenser's neglects: l. 358, 'crafty': l. 359, 'faithfull' [*sic*]: l. 362, 'e': l. 363, 'trauellers': l. 370, 'burdein': l. 371, 'behynd,' and so 'y' for 'i' in stanza's rhyme-words.

My Lord and I will search the wide forrest.
 That counsell pleased not *Malbecco's* mind ;
 For he was much affraid, himselfe alone to find.

Then is it best (said he) that ye doe leaue
 Your treasure here in some securitie,
 Either fast closed in some hollow greaue,
 Or buried in the ground from ieopardie,
 Till we returne againe in safetie :
 As for vs two, least doubt of vs ye haue, 380
 Hence farre away we will blindfolded lie,
 Ne priuie be vnto your treasures graue.
 It pleased : so he did, Then they march forward braue.

Now when amid the thickest woods they were,
 They heard a noyse of many bagpipes shrill,
 And shrieking Hububs them approaching nere,
 Which all the forrest did with horror fill :
 That / dreadfull sound the boasters hart did thrill,
 With such amazement, that in haste he fled,
 Ne euer looked backe for good or ill, 390
 And after him eke fearefull *Trompart* sped ;
 The old man could not fly, but fell to ground halfe
 ded.

Yet afterwards close creeping, as he might,
 He in a bush did hide his fearefull hed,

l. 372, 'wild' in 1609 : *ib.*, 'forest,' and so l. 387 : l. 374, 'afraid him
 selfe' : l. 376, 'security,' and so 'y' for 'i' in stanza's rhyme-words : l. 381,
 'blyndfolded' : l. 382, 'priuie bee' : l. 383, . for , : l. 384, 'woodes' : l. 387,
 'horour' : l. 388, 'boasters' : l. 389, 'hast' . . . fledd,' and so double d in
 rhyme-words of the stanza : l. 390, 'back' : l. 392, 'half' : l. 393, 'after-
 wardes' : l. 394, 'hyde' . . . hedd,' and double d as before.

The iolly *Satyres* full of fresh delight,
 Came dauncing forth, and with them nimble led
 Faire *Helenore*, with girlonds all bespred,
 Whom their May-lady they had newly made :
 She proud of that new honour, which they red,
 And of their louely fellowship full glade, 400
 Daunst liuely, and her face did with a Lawrell shade.

The filly man that in the thicket lay
 Saw all this goodly sport, and grieved fore,
 Yet durst he not against it doe or say,
 But did his hart with bitter thoughts engore,
 To see th'vnkindnesse of his *Hellenore*.
 All day they daunced with great lustihed,
 And with their horned feet the greene grasse wore,
 The whiles their Gotes vpon the brouzes fed,
 Till drouping *Phæbus* gan to hide his golden hed. 410

Tho vp they gan their merry pypes to trusse,
 And all their goodly heards did gather round,
 But euery *Satyre* first did giue a busse
 To *Hellenore* : so buffes did abound.
 Now gan the humid vapour shed the ground
 With perly dew, and th'Earthes gloomy shade
 Did dim the brightnesse of the welkin round,
 That euery bird and beast awarned made,
 To shrowd themselues, whiles sleepe their senses did in-
 uade. /

l. 399, 'proude': l. 406, 'vnkindnes': l. 407, 'lusty hedd': l. 408, 'gras': l. 409, , for . of '96: l. 410, 'hyde': l. 411, 'mery': l. 412, 'heardes . . . rownd,' and so 'w' for 'u' in rhyme-words of the stanza except 'abound': l. 419, 'fences.'

Which when *Malbecco* saw, out of his bufh 420
 Vpon his hands and feete he crept full light,
 And like a Gote emongft the Gotes did rufh,
 That through the helpe of his faire hornes on hight,
 And mifty dampe of misconceiuing night,
 And eke through likenesse of his gotifh beard,
 He did the better counterfeite aright :
 So home he marcht emongft the horned heard,
 That none of all the *Satyres* him efpyde or heard.

At night, when all they went to fleepe, he vewd,
 Whereas his louely wife emongft them lay, 430
 Embraced of a *Satyre* rough and rude,
 Who all the night did minde his ioyous play :
 Nine times he heard him come aloft ere day,
 That all his hart with gealofie did fwell ;
 But yet that nights enfample did bewray,
 That not for nought his wife them loued fo well,
 When one fo oft a night did ring his matins bell.

So clofely as he could, he to them crept,
 When wearie of their fport to fleepe they fell,
 And to his wife, that now full foundly fleep, 440
 He whifpered in her eare, and did her tell,
 That it was he, which by her fide did dwell,
 And therefore prayd her wake, to heare him plaine.
 As one out of a dreame not waked well,
 She turned her, and returned backe againe :
 Yet her for to awake he did the more confraine.

l. 420, '*Malbecco*' is again misprinted '*Melbecco*' in '96: *ib.*, '*the*' 1609 for '*his*': l. 421, '*hands*' is misprinted '*hand*' in '96: l. 424, '*misconceyning*': l. 434, '*gealofy*': l. 445, '*turnd*.'

At laſt with irkeſome trouble ſhe abrayd ;
 And then perceiuing, that it was indeed
 Her old *Malbecco*, which did her vpbrayd,
 With loofeneſſe of her loue, and loathly deed, 450
 She / was aſtoniſht with exceeding dreed,
 And would haue wakt the *Satyre* by her fyde ;
 But he her prayd, for mercy, or for meed,
 To faue his life, ne let him be deſcryde,
 But hearken. to his lore, and all his counſell hyde.

Tho gan he her perſwade, to leaue that lewd
 And loathſome life, of God and man abhord,
 And home returne, where all ſhould be renewd
 With perfect peace, and bandes of freſh accord,
 And ſhe receiu'd againe to bed and bord, 460
 As if no trefpaſſe euer had bene donne :
 But ſhe it all refus'd at one word,
 And by no meanes would to his will be wonne,
 But choſe emongſt the iolly *Satyres* ſtill to wonne.

He wooed her, till day ſprings he eſpyde ;
 But all in vaine : and then turnd to the heard,
 Who butted him with hornes on euery fyde,
 And trode downe in the durt, where his hore beard
 Was fowly dight, and he of death afeard.
 Early before the heauens faireſt light 470
 Out of the ruddy Eaſt was fully reard,
 The heardeſ out of their foldes were loofed quight,
 And he emongſt the reſt crept forth in fory plight.

So ſoone as he the Priſon dore did paſ,
 He ran as faſt, as both his feete could beare,

l. 457, 'loathſom' : l. 461, 'trefpaſ.'



And neuer looked, who behind him was,
 Ne scarfely who before : like as a Beare
 That creeping close, amongft the hiues to reare
 An hony combe, the wakefull dogs espy,
 And him affayling, fore his carkaffe teare, 480
 That hardly he with life away does fly,
 Ne stayes, till fafe himfelfe he fee from ieopardy. /

Ne stayd he, till he came vnto the place,
 Where late his treasure he entombed had,
 Where when he found it not (for *Trompart* bace
 Had it purloyned for his maifter bad :)
 With extreme fury he became quite mad,
 And ran away, ran with himfelfe away :
 That who fo straungely had him feene beftad,
 With vpstart haire, and staring eyes difmay, 490
 From Limbo lake him late efaped fure would fay.

High ouer hilles and ouer dales he fled,
 As if the wind him on his winges had borne,
 Ne banck nor bufh could ftay him, when he fped
 His nimble feet, as treading ftill on thorne :
 Griefe, and defpight, and gealofie, and fcorne
 Did all the way him follow hard behind,
 And he himfelfe himfelfe loath'd fo forlorne,
 So shamefully forlorne of womankind ;
 That as a Snake, ftill lurked in his wounded mind. 500

Still fled he forward, looking backward ftill,
 Ne stayd his flight, nor fearefull agony,

l. 480, 'carkas' : l. 488, 'him felfe,' and so l. 507 : l. 489, 'befladd' :
 l. 492, 'fledde,' and so double *d* in l. 494 : l. 496, 'gealofy' : l. 497, 'behynd,'
 and 'y' for 'i' in rhyme-words of the stanza.

Till that he came vnto a rockie hill,
 Ouer the sea, fufpended dreadfully,
 That liuing creature it would terrify,
 To looke adowne, or vpward to the hight :
 From thence he threw himfelfe difpiteoufly,
 All defperate of his fore-damned fpright,
 That feem'd no helpe for him was left in liuing fight.

But through long anguifh, and felfe-murdring thought
 He was fo wafed and forpined quight, 511
 That all his fubftance was confum'd to nought,
 And nothing left, but like an aery Spright,
 That / on the rockes he fell fo flit and light,
 That he thereby receiu'd no hurt at all,
 But chaunced on a craggy cliff to light ;
 Whence he with crooked clawes fo long did crall,
 That at the laft he found a caue with entrance fmall.

Into the fame he creepes, and thenceforth there
 Refolu'd to build his balefull manfion, 520
 In drery darkeneffe, and continuall feare
 Of that rockes fall, which euer and anon
 Threates with huge ruine him to fall vpon,
 That he dare neuer sleepe, but that one eye
 Still ope he keepes for that occafion ;
 Ne euer refts he in tranquillity,
 The roring billowes beat his bowre fo boyftroufly.

Ne euer is he wont on ought to feed,
 But toades and frogs, his pasture poyfonous,

l. 503, 'rocky' : l. 509, 'feemd . . . help' : l. 521, 'darkenes' : l. 522,
 'rocks' : l. 529, 'todes.'

342 *THE III. BOOKE OF THE FAERIE QVEENE.*

Which in his cold complexion do breed 530
 A filthy bloud, or humour rancorous,
 Matter of doubt and dread fuspitious,
 That doth with curelesse care consume the hart,
 Corrupts the stomacke with gall vitious,
 Croscuts the liuer with internall smart,
 And doth transfixe the soule with deathes eternall dart.

Yet can he neuer dye, but dying liues,
 And doth himselfe with sorrow new sustaine,
 That death and life attonce vnto him giues.
 And painefull pleasure turnes to pleasing paine. 540
 There dwels he euer, miserable fwaine,
 Hatefull both to him selfe, and euery wight ;
 Where he through priuy grieffe, and horror vaine,
 Is woxen so deform'd, that he has quight
 Forgot he was a man, and *Gealofie* is hight. /

l. 530, 'doe' : l. 531, 'blood' : l. 545, 'Gealofy.'

END OF VOL. VI.

Hazel, Watson, and Viney, Printers, London and Aylesbury.

45

78.